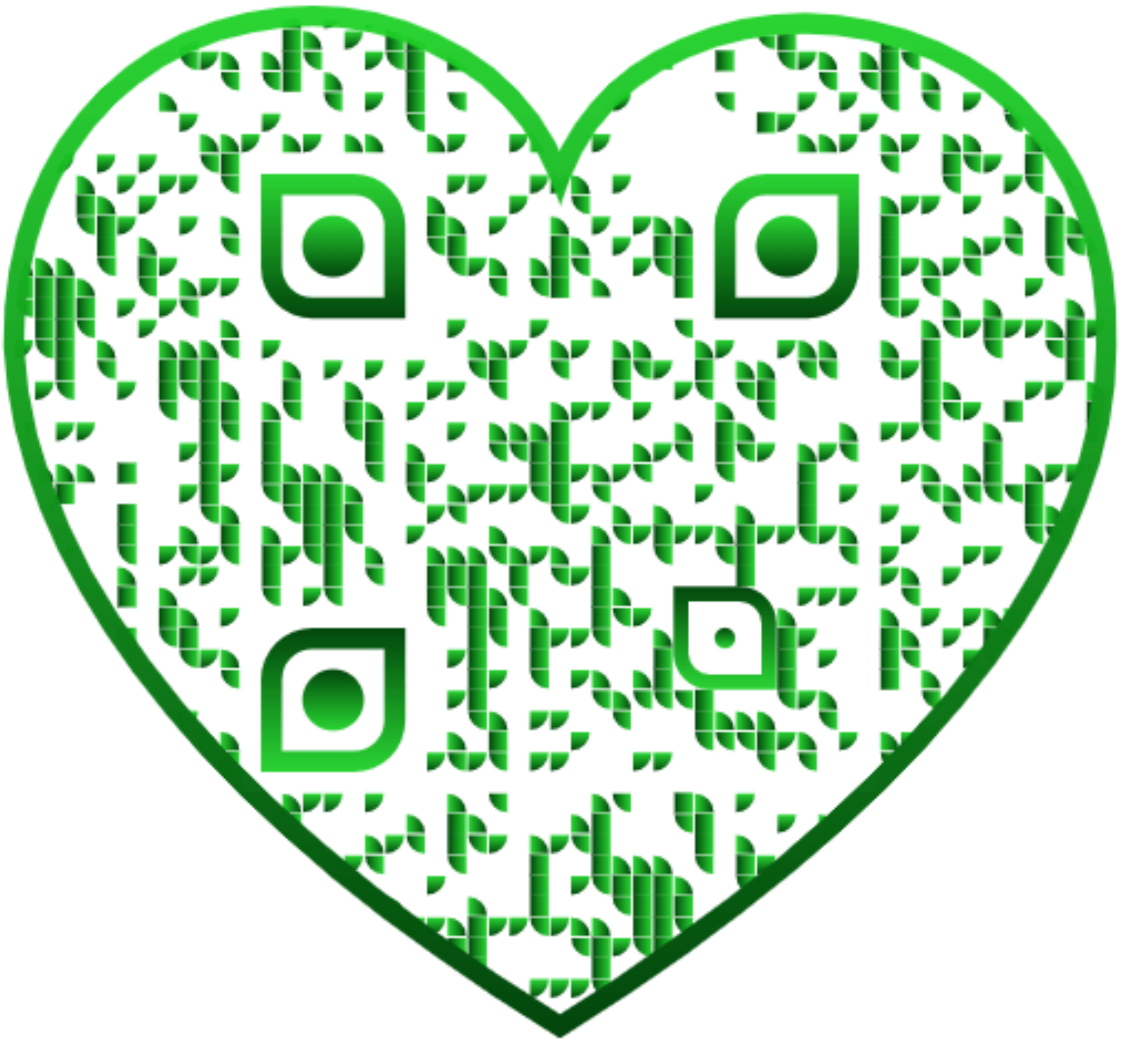
Authentic, frightening eyewitness accounts of

STRANGE CREATURES FROM TIME AND SPACE

BY JOHN A. KEEL

The first complete report of weird beings sighted in every part of the world . . . and a startling new explanation.



About the Author

JOHN A. KEEL has been on the spoor of the weird ones for a quarter-century. For that long he has been tracking down the wild tales of aliens from outer space, of the Big Foots of California, of snakes that glow, and of all the strange and terrifying and sometimes injurious creatures that ordinary citizens keep running into. He has become the top man in the field of the inexplicable. And something more.

Keel has an explanation for the unusual things he recounts. In his mountain of way-out evidence he sees a pattern and he draws a conclusion—original, startling, and convincing.

Keel was born in monster country—on a farm near Silver Lake, New York, home of one of America's native sea serpents. He began writing articles on UFOs in 1945, two years before the great UFOmania began. In 1952 he produced a Halloween broadcast from Frankenstein Castle in Germany, and in 1954 he saw his first flying saucer—while exploring the Upper Nile on an Egyptology kick. For years Keel wandered about Asia in search of the strange and occult. The last American to enter Tibet from the Indian side, he spent weeks tracking the Abominable Snowman. He has written books on UFOs, and articles on all sorts of sightings for Playboy and Fate magazines. Essentially he is an open-minded skeptic. There is no one alive better qualified to report on and interpret the antirational "unacceptable" flood of evidence of today than Keel.

STRANGE CREATURES FROM TIME AND SPACE

by John A. Keel

Contents

1 A World Filled with Ambling Nightmares
2 "The Uglies and the Nasties"
3 Demon Dogs and Phantom Cats
4 Flying Felines
5 The Incomprehensibles
6 Giants in the Earth
7 The Hairy Ones
8 Meanwhile in the Soviet Union
9 Big Feet and Little Brains
10 Creatures from the Black Lagoon
11 Those Silly "Flying Saucer" People
12 The Big Joke from Outer Space
13 Cattle Rustlers from the Skies

14 The Grinning Man
15 The Bedroom Invaders
16 Winged Weirdos
17 The Man-Birds
18 West Virginia's "Mothman"
19 Unidentified Swimming Objects
20 Scoliophis Atlanticus
21 The Great Sea Serpent of Silver Lake, New York
22 The Yellow Submarine Caper
23 Something Else . . .
Organizations and Publications

ONE

A World Filled with Ambling Nightmares

NO MATTER where you live on this planet, someone within two hundred miles of your home has had a direct confrontation with a frightening apparition or inexplicable "monster" within the last generation. Perhaps it was even your cousin or your next-door neighbor. There is a chance—a very good one—that sometime in the next few years you will actually come face to face with a giant hair-covered humanoid or a little man with bulging eyes, surrounded by a ghostly greenish glow.

An almost infinite variety of known and unknown creatures thrive on this mudball and appear regularly year after year, century after century. Uncounted millions of people have been terrified by their unexpected appearances in isolated forests, deserted highways, and even in the quiet back streets of heavily populated cities. Whole counties have been seized by "monster mania," with every available man joining armed posses to beat the bushes in search for the unbelievable somethings that have killed herds of cows and slaughtered dogs and horses.

Over the past hundred years, thousands of intriguing human

interest items have appeared in newspapers all over the world, describing incredible encounters with awesome creatures unknown to science. Can all these items be hoaxes and journalistic jokes? Can we believe that the major wire services, whose very existence depends on their reliability, employ men to concoct and circulate irresponsible tales about hairy giants and helmeted pygmies stepping from circular flying machines? Can we conclude that the millions of badly frightened people who have reported such encounters to the local police and authorities are merely pathological liars and lunatics?

We know that our little planet is infested with remarkable animals and insects that defy common sense. Have you ever considered the total absurdity of the giraffe? Or that inane rodent, the lemming, swarms of which periodically march across miles of ice in the Arctic to drown themselves in the sea?

Scientists had a good laugh in 1856, when Paul du Chaillu returned from the Congo and described his encounter with a hairy giant. "He stood about a dozen yards from us, and was a sight I think I shall never forget," Du Chaillu reported. "Nearly six feet high, with immense body, huge chest, and great muscular arms, with fiercely glaring large deep gray eyes . . . he stood there and beat his breast with his huge fists till it resounded like an immense bass drum."

We know now that Du Chaillu was the first white man to meet a gorilla in Africa. Gorillas did not exist in 1856 simply because the desk-bound scientists of London and Paris said they did not exist.

People are still seeing things that do not exist scientifically. They are seeing them in Nebraska, in England, in Siberia, in South East Asia, and in national parks everywhere.

A Reuters dispatch from Malaysia on August 15, 1966, reported that an ape twenty-five feet tall was on the loose. Residents of the little village of Segamat were quoted in the Malay Mail as

describing a shy, harmless giant who blundered about in the bushes, leaving huge eighteen-inch footprints in his wake. The report speculated that perhaps the giant ape was on the move because of the pressure of advancing civilization and the loss of feeding grounds.

An ape twenty-five feet tall is a biological impossibility. But that does not mean that one cannot exist.

Berwick, Nova Scotia, sounds exotic and faraway. Actually it is on the Canadian peninsula lying just off the coast of Maine. In April 1969 a giant eighteen-foot-tall figure was seen by many residents on the outskirts of that little town in the Annapolis valley, according to the Evening News. It was allegedly a "tall, very dark form" seen striding about the landscape at a speed of about twenty miles per hour. After the initial witnesses reported the "Phantom," as it became known, local police had to assign two cars to the area to control the bumper-to-bumper traffic.

People in Nova Scotia have been seeing all kinds of oddities for years. Giant luminous snakes that appeared suddenly and melted away mysteriously were reported there in 1967.

These things are "erratics" and "anomalies." They have been entertaining us for years, and their appearances have spawned all kinds of cults and "crackpot-ologies" ranging from "Angelology" (the study of the frequent appearances of angels) to UFOlogy (the study of flying saucers). Since 1896 a spectacular assortment of weird apparitions have been dropping out of the sky to plague us. A nude giant paid a visit to Michigan in 1897, according to the newspapers of the period, and when a farmer tried to move in for a closer look, the creature lashed out with his giant foot and broke the poor man's ribs.

For the past twenty years South America has been infested with beings ranging from eight-foot giants with single eyes in the middle of their foreheads to little man-shaped things only two feet

tall. Cyclopean giants have also reportedly been seen in the state of Oregon, and a radio announcer in Minnesota claims he ran into a group of tiny animated tin cans only six inches tall. Other creatures ranging from fifteen to twenty feet in height have scared the daylights out of people in such scattered places as Mexico and Argentina.

In West Virginia more than one hundred sober, God-fearing people have seen some sort of tall, gray human-like figure with wings since 1966. It has glowing red eyes and is known locally as "Mothman." A similar creature horrified four teenagers in Kent, England, back in 1963.

These are only a few of the examples in our lexicon of monsters and ambling nightmares. There are hundreds more and we will try to give a comprehensive, documented account of each one as we go along. Unfortunately there is very little scientific evidence that any of these things really exist. In many cases unusual footprints were found on the ground afterwards and plaster casts were made of them. In some instances witnesses were clawed or went into a state of shock and required medical attention. Over and over again police officers and sheriffs have thought enough of the witnesses' credibility to organize posses and search parties to scour the area for some trace of these elusive beasts, always without success.

You are, of course, familiar with the giant footprints of the celebrated Abominable Snowman (ABSM) of the Himalayas, which have been seen and photographed by numerous mountain-climbing expeditions. But did you know that the same kind of tall, hairy creature has frequently been seen throughout the United States? He—or it—turns up almost annually in such places as California, Michigan, Florida, and New York. Hundreds of people have seen these ABSMs in the past hundred years. All of their descriptions tally. The reliability of most of these people is beyond question.

We have personally investigated many of the cases in this book and have talked to the witnesses for hours on end, probing for discrepancies in their stories and trying to uncover emotional or psychological aberrations. It is our studied conclusion that the great majority of these people are telling the truth. Any one of them would make an acceptable and credible witness in a court of law if called upon to testify about a more mundane matter. We are not dealing with wild-eyed crackpots and publicity seekers. These are people very much like yourself and, contrary to the hardboiled cynicism of New York editors, most people are honest and they are particularly truthful when trying to describe an unusual but possibly important event to police officers, newsmen, and scientific investigators.

Many of these witnesses will be named in this book. They are real people, they exist, and you can check them out if you wish, although by now most of them are weary of the ridicule and nonsense that usually follows the act of reporting an unusual event.

Skeptics who have had no newspaper experience usually try to make an issue out of the reliability of newspaper reports. We grew up in the newspaper business and have been involved in journalism all our life. Newsmen are trained in a hard school and total objectivity becomes a part of their lifestyle. Most newspaper reports are very reliable. We personally have had the opportunity to check out many newspaper clippings by visiting the scene and talking directly to the witnesses. Often we found that the local newspapers had actually protected the witness by playing down or deleting altogether the more incredible aspects of his story. This means that many of the newspaper accounts offer only a superficial description of the event and an in-depth, on-the-spot investigation is necessary to uncover all the details.

So we are not going to dwell on the false issues of reliability in

this book. Rather, we are going to try to assemble and present the available facts on these bizarre situations. As you go along, you will begin to note that there are striking correlations and similarities in many of these stories, no matter where or when they occurred. The smaller details become the most significant. Identical happenings have been reported in France, Brazil, and Ohio. Yet few, if any, of these stories have been widely circulated beyond the area of origin. If all these people are liars, then we had better launch a psychiatric program to determine how so many far-flung liars are able to come up with the same significant, correlating details in their lies.

On the other hand, there exists a large and vocal group of men who are unreliable and often irresponsible. Over the past several years our work has brought us into almost constant contact with this group. They call themselves "scientists" and they usually put a Ph.D. after their names. Science has become a sacred cow in this generation but that term is a misnomer. The gender is wrong. Science, by and large, is a lot of bull.

In all fairness, we must admit that there are two kinds of scientists. Type A works for a large corporation or an important government agency. He is a proven producer. He has helped develop new soaps and toothpastes and atomic engines. He is rarely quoted in the press. In his spare time he writes scholarly papers that make a contribution to his chosen field. While he can have a large ego and other human failings, he does not seek publicity and his rare public statements are carefully worded and often make good sense.

Type B is not a producer. He is usually a teacher at some university or small college. He is caught up in the vicious "publish or perish" atmosphere of our educational system and so he also grinds out reams of books and papers, generally based on a systematic plagiarism of the works of Type A. He seeks publicity

and is frequently seen placing his foot in his mouth. It is a common practice for newspapermen to call upon the nearest available "authority" when an unusual event occurs. If, for example, a meteor flashes across the local skies, the reporter will phone the professor of astronomy at the nearest school. This professor will either talk off the top of his head or he will scurry to his bookshelf and quote from the works of a Type A scientist.

Much of the scientific rubbish you read in your daily newspapers comes from the mouths of Type B. Type A is usually too busy, too inaccessible, and too smart to pontificate for the press.

For years Type B scientists have been telling us that the Abominable Snowman did not exist. None of these men had ever ventured closer than three thousand miles to the Himalayas. Their conclusion was based upon the fact that no scientific literature existed on the subject. Similarly, a number of college professors, without bothering to talk to a single witness, identified West Virginia's "Mothman" as a kind of ordinary bird.

Back in 1938 some fishermen in South Africa found a very odd specimen in their nets. It turned out to be a coelacanth fish which had been considered extinct for many thousands of years. Then the fun began. Recently Ivan T. Sanderson, a biologist and one of the world's leading authorities on animal oddities, commented on the coelacanth fracas:

> A certain Doctor of Piscology, i.e. Ichthyology, stated for the record, and to none less than the Associated Press, on the hearing of the initial announcement of such a fishy thing having been obtained by a Dr. Latimer of the Port Elizabeth Museum in South Africa, that it was impossible, because "we all know" that all coelacanths have been totally extinct for some 70-million years. That

was in August, 1938. In August 1948, the same great expert stated, and to AP again, plainly, clearly and categorically that: This is probably the greatest zoological discovery of all time, but we [who are these wes?] have always expected it because it is, after all, a shallow-water fish."
The coelacanth is a deepwater fish.

There are very few genuine scientific authorities on the subjects to be discussed in this book. That is, authorities who have personally investigated and studied these various phenomena. These will be quoted along the way, and from time to time, Type B scientists will also be quoted without comment. The discriminating reader can draw his own conclusions.

There is only one acceptable group of authorities for our monster stories—the witnesses themselves. Our only evidence is testimonial; the same kind of evidence used in a court of law. Too many honest, reliable people have seen these things to discount them. Too many newspapers have been publishing too many of these stories for too many years. The question is not: Did these people see anything? Rather, it is: What did these people see?

Man is now exploring the moon at a cost of approximately four billion dollars a year, even though four-fifths of the planet Earth has not been adequately explored or even surveyed. Within a few years we will undoubtedly know more about our satellite than we know about our home base. When our space program was launched, its publicly avowed purpose was the "search for extraterrestrial life." A dramatic and imaginative challenge, to be sure, but this planet is teeming with all kinds of life forms that we know nothing about.

You have seen the tiny insect known as the silverfish. It seems to live in the bindings of books; a tiny white bug that eats glue. At

last report, no scientist had yet bothered to study the silverfish and learn its life cycle. We don't know a damned thing about the bugs crawling around on our bookshelves but we are searching for life outside this planet!

We have a theory. It is not very scientific but it is based upon the known facts. These creatures and strange events tend to recur in the same areas year after year, even century after century. This, in itself, indicates that the creatures somehow live in those areas which we call "windows." West Virginia had many unusual creature reports before "Mothman" appeared in 1966. Either everyone in West Virginia is slap-happy, a theory we vehemently contest since we have visited that state five times in the past three years, or else there is some place in the back hills where these things are hiding out.

Our next fact makes the "hide out" theory untenable. Posses, experienced hunters, and even helicopters have searched for these monsters immediately after some of these events and have failed to find any trace of a hiding place. So where did they go?

Mundane explanations do not seem to fit the known facts. We have to stretch our minds a bit and extend our imaginations into the paranormal. The sudden appearances and disappearances of these wild, unknown creatures all over the world, even in densely populated areas, suggests that they have some means of transportation or else they are deliberately dumped here and retrieved by some form of transportation. Although unidentified flying objects (UFOs) are frequently seen in these same "window" areas, they, too, manage to appear and disappear before the bewildered eyes of Air Force fighter pilots.

Obviously, something far more complicated is involved. Some specialists are now toying with theories involving concepts of the fourth dimension. Researchers such as Allen Greenfield of Atlanta,

Georgia, and Brinsley Le Poer Trench, a well-known British author, have considered ideas involving "interpenetration." They speculate that another world exists outside our space-time continuum and that these myriad objects and creatures have found doors from their world to ours in these "window" sectors. Admittedly it is a far-fetched idea, yet much of the data supports it.

No matter what the source, something strange is engulfing our planet. It does not matter if these Unbelievables are coming from some distant star or from the fourth dimension. They are here. They have been seen by many. Perhaps one day the Bronx Zoo will have a "Mothman" and an Abominable Snowman in cages next to the Komodo dragon. But until that day arrives, we must consider every possibility and every explanation.

TWO

"The Uglies and the Nasties"

APPROXIMATELY one million head of cattle die each year from the bites of vampire bats in Central and South America, according to a research project financed by the United Nations and the Mexican government. The little bats carry and spread rabies, and it is believed that at least sixty human beings have suffered from the disease in the last fifteen years because of the creatures' nocturnal blood lapping.

Vampire bats are among the more mundane monsters in our catalog of Unbelievables. They're little fellows, rarely measuring over three inches long, with an average wingspread of eight inches. They look something like deformed mice with wings, and they have a set of tiny, razor-sharp teeth so well-honed they can make a deft incision into human flesh without their victim even being aware of it. Since their throats are too small to swallow solid particles of food, they are obliged to live on blood.

When it strikes, the little bat settles on the neck or flank of a cow, makes a small, expert incision into the animal's flesh, and proceeds to lick up the blood that flows forth. It does not suck the

blood. Scientists believe that the bat's saliva contains an anticoagulant, which keeps the blood flowing even after the nasty little fellow has had his dinner. (Various types of leeches also apply an anticoagulant for this purpose, and the tiny lesions they create can bleed for hours afterwards.) The vampire bat is a greedy character and will lap up blood until his small body is nearly spherical. Then he clumsily spreads his wings and flutters off to his cave to sleep it off.

Human victims are nearly always bitten in the toes. Explorers and peasants in the back hills of Central America frequently wake up in the morning to find their feet, which had been sticking out from under the sheets—if they were using sheets—covered with blood. It is very rare for the victim to actually feel the bat's presence. Usually the wound is completely painless. Occasionally the bats will take a nip out of other exposed parts of the body—the arms, the legs. But they very seldom attack the human neck or face.

Unconfirmed (uninvestigated) rumors appear from time to time claiming that swarms of rabid bats have openly attacked villages and plantations, swarming over people like locusts and killing them or driving them mad.

Well-known scientists and explorers, such as the late Dr. Raymond Lee Ditmars of the American Museum of Natural History, have invaded the caves of vampire bats and brought back live specimens for study. So we know these things definitely exist. Some Type B scientists speculated that the many vampire legends of central Europe may have been spawned by an influx of vampire bats in the Middle Ages. However, those legends seem to be completely unrelated to the tiny bats and deserve separate study.

Some five thousand feet below the surface of the oceans there lurks another tiny creature with a vampirish reputation. In their infinite wisdom, scientists have labeled it Vampyrotouthis

infernalis, the vampire of hell. This is a little black monstrosity about two inches long with red eyes an inch in diameter, a mouthful of sharp white teeth, ten squirming tentacles, and hundreds of glowing lights all over its minute body. It is a mollusk, distant relative of the fearsome octopus. Since it lives in the tremendous pressures of the great depths, we do not know too much about its life cycle and habits, but it is clearly a miniature carnivore which probably gobbles up anything of comparable size that comes its way. Hundreds of these creatures have been caught by appalled fishermen, and Yale's Bingham Oceanographic Laboratory has studied them.

The Vampyrotouthis infernalis is a minor example of the strange and infinite variety of life forms which exist hidden away from us at the bottoms of the oceans.

Our splendid planet is seething with all kinds of strange animals and plants in dire need of a good press agent. Some, like the redoubtable gooney birds of the Pacific, cannot quite make up their mind what they are. The gooney would like to be a bird but often, after much fluttering of wings and running back and forth, it will fall flat on its face instead of taking off. There are birds that can't fly at all, such as the ostrich and the penguin, and there are animals that can. The flying squirrel glides from tree to tree by spreading a membrane it has conveniently grown between its legs. Throughout Asia there exists the Opisthoglypha, a flying snake. This character is about 3 feet long and has the ability to flatten its ribs. It hides in a tree and when a delicious-looking lizard strolls by underneath, it soars into space and spirals downward for dinner. It can glide a considerable distance.

There are many other kinds of legendary snakes that do not actually exist, yet new stories about them crop up in every generation. One is the hoop snake which, according to folklore,

catches its tail in its mouth to form a circle or hoop and rolls away from its enemies. Another popular nonexistent snake is the milk snake. This one is supposed to sneak up on cows and attach itself to the animal's udders to drink its fill. A Latin book, The Bestiary, written in the twelfth century, describes both of these. The hoop snake was called the Amphivena and the milk snake was identified as an Italian boa. Flying snakes were known in even earlier times and were labeled the Jaculus.

Dr. Ditmars, one of the world's greatest herpetologists, believed that the hoop snake myth was centered around the common mud snake, which has a habit of lying in a half-coiled position in shallow water. "I have sometimes mistaken these snakes for a bicycle tire thrown into a watery ditch," he noted in his definitive Snakes of the World.

Farmers in North America, lacking an Italian boa, have labeled a species of the common and harmless king snake the milk snake.

Several years ago we returned from an Abominable Snowman hunting expedition in India with a live, "two-headed snake" among our souvenirs, somewhat to the consternation of the neighbors in our New York apartment building. The snake was a small sand boa, thick and blunt on both ends. The eyes and mouth were so ill-defined that it was very difficult to judge which was the head and which was the tail. The natives of India actually believe that type of snake has a head on both ends and can travel in either direction. This particular specimen was very lethargic, as most boas are, and a gentle, almost lovable, creature. Snakes, incidently, are not slimy to the touch; they are very dry. The sand boa's skin was almost like crinkly cellophane. One hot summer day it expired suddenly in its glass cage and received a funeral befitting the only "two-headed snake" in America.

India, of course, is filled with snake legends . . . and snakes. Cobras are responsible for the deaths of over one thousand people

every year in Bombay alone. Like all snakes, cobras are deaf and pick up vibrations from the ground with an auditory nerve that runs the length of their bodies. The ancient art of snake-charming is based on showmanship and courage (or stupidity). The snake charmer's flute is just a gimmick, and the inept way most charmers play the instrument makes a snake bite justifiable. The charmer waves the long flute back and forth as he puffs into it and the cobra sways with it, actually trying to get the charmer's bare hands in a striking position. If the charmer pauses in his movements, the snake will lash out.

What a way to make a living.

The roster of nasties and uglies in the animal kingdom would not be complete without some mention of the arachnids: spiders and scorpions. Nearly everybody hates arachnids, even though most of them are harmless to human beings. There is something repugnant about little crawly multi-legged insects that drives most housewives up the wall.

A number of pseudoscientists have suggested that our fear of arachnids stems from some buried racial memory, from some dark time when giant arachnids roamed the earth and menaced human beings. The Bible warns us in Revelations (9:10) of fearsome scorpion-like beings rising up from the bowels of the earth: "And they had tails like unto scorpions, and there were stings in their tails: and their power was to hurt men five months."

For whatever reason, the fear of these little insects runs deep and has always been with us.

We have sat in outdoor cafes in Cairo, Egypt, and watched scorpions scramble around the walls of nearby buildings, pursuing insects. Their wavering tails are tipped with a poisonous barb that paralyzes their prey. Their sting has been known to kill men. In the little village of Abu Rawash, not far from the Great Pyramid of

Gizah, we met a family of snake hunters who were so adept at handling these loathsome creatures that they even put scorpions on their faces and let them crawl around while we took pictures.

When you travel through scorpion country it becomes a habit to shake out your shoes every morning in case one of the little monsters has staked out a claim in the toe and is lying in wait to give you a new kind of hotfoot.

Fossils and other evidence dating back 350 million years indicate that giant scorpions or euripterids ranging from five to nine feet long were once plentiful on this planet. Maybe they were the source of the "racial memory" which still haunts us.

There are spiders on this planet so big that they prey upon birds and snakes. While boa constrictors crush all the bones of their victims before swallowing them whole, spiders discharge a very potent fluid over their trapped prey. This fluid liquifies the victim, for spiders cannot eat solid food. Lizards, snakes, and fish have been killed by giant spiders and liquified in a matter of hours.

Nature works in complex ways. All kinds of animals and insects have developed weird and even ridiculous digestive systems. We have sponges that pump water through their cells to extract whatever food particles might exist. There are fish that climb trees, snakes that can glide, birds that can't fly, bats that can't land, microscopic forms of life that live on stone and even lead.

We have trees and plants that feast upon insects and living things. There are even animals that are cunningly disguised as plants, such as crinoids: brilliantly colored things with feather-like arms which can exude a paralyzing poison. Not so long ago there were myths of a man-eating plant on Madagascar but these eventually proved to be without foundation.

The famous Venus's-flytrap, a bug-consuming plant, has been found growing naturally in only one spot on the earth. That spot is an ancient meteor crater in North Carolina. Colonial Governor

Arthur Dobbs discovered the flytrap in 1760, and there has been much speculation since then that the plant was somehow introduced to our world by a crashing meteor.

When we try to assess these wonders, we are forced to ask ourselves how many other marvels may exist with us without our knowledge? The gorilla was considered a mere myth for many years, as was the okapi, a crazy combination of horse and zebra which was first captured in Africa in the early 1900s. A ferocious giant lizard, the Komodo dragon, remained folklore until the 1930s when an American expedition visited Indonesia and brought one back alive.

A world that can produce vampire bats, flying snakes, and nine-foot scorpions might well be able to serve as the nesting place for fifteen-foot-tall apes and giant birds. The Abominable Snowman is no more impossible than a fifteen-foot-tall penguin and, believe it or not, there is some evidence that such a breed of penguins exists. There is also considerable evidence, which we will review later on, that ten-foot-tall giant men once roamed this little mudball of ours.

The Type B scientists sit in their campus ivory towers and scoff while men like Dr. Ditmars poke around inhospitable jungles and caves reeking with bat guano. In any given year the back pages of your own local newspaper carries dozens of small "human interest" items about new sightings of sea serpents, ABSMs, and the funny folk who ride around in flying saucers. Are all these things journalistic put-ons? Are we still wallowing in the myths and nonsense of the Middle Ages?

THREE

Demon Dogs and Phantom Cats

HUGE DOGS and cats of unknown origin have appeared and reappeared frequently all over the world, spreading terror and nurturing superstition in their wake. There are numerous documented accounts of these apparitions in medieval histories. But such events continue to persist to this day. England has suffered periodic outbreaks of these monsters, but so have the civilized, sophisticated climes of Connecticut and Michigan. In many of these incidents, the creatures somehow materialized during violent thunder storms.

In 856 A.D., a church in Trier, Prussia, was suddenly invaded by "a dog of immense size" during a storm which filled the place with such darkness that members of the congregation could hardly see each other. The floor seemed to open, according to the account in Annales Francorum Regum, and the huge beast rose up to run back and forth to the altar. Another ancient text, Chronicon Saxonicus, relates a similar incident eleven years later in 867 A.D.

A gigantic pig-like thing reportedly appeared in the church at Andover, Hants, England, on Christmas Eve, 1171. It dashed

around the altar just as the priest was struck by lightning from within the church and killed. Incredible though it may seem, these monstrous "pigs" have been reported again and again in a long series of perplexing cases.

Lightning often accompanies these manifestations. A Tudor historian named John Stowe recorded the following in the sixteenth century: "In the reign of King John thunder and lightning killed many men and women, and children, burnt cornfields, and fishes of strange shape, armed with helmets and shields, like armed men were caught, only they were much bigger . . ."

Giant fish clad in armor! There's an Unbelievable for you.

On August 4, 1577, lightning struck the church in Bliborough, Suffolk, killing two people and injuring several others. That same day "a thing like a black dog" materialized in a church in Bungay, England, causing some parishioners to die instantly. Meanwhile, seven miles away in the church at Blythburgh, a similar giant dog killed two men and a boy. The Bungay monster allegedly left behind deep clawmarks in the church masonry. There are numerous historical records of this frightening Sunday.

Freakish footprints have a way of turning up during these outlandish events. According to the Chronicles of Abbot Ralph of Essex, following a horrible electric storm in England on July 29, 1205, "monstrous tracks were seen in several places, and of a kind never seen before. Men said they were the prints of demons."

Enormous prints were supposedly left behind by the huge flying black horse that thundered across York, England, during a lightning storm in 1065. Abbot Ralph's account indicates that York experienced another rash of strange footprints in the years 1189-99: "In the time of King Richard I, of England, there appeared in a certain grassy, flat ground human footprints of extraordinary length; and everywhere the footprints were impressed the grass remained as if scorched by fire."

Flying horses and smoldering footprints only mark the beginning of our narrative. Those were the centuries of dragons and assorted monsters of every description. Most of the records of the times were kept by no-nonsense priests and clergymen who played down the sensational aspects of many of these events, making it necessary to check and cross check many different records before the full story can be assembled.

Perhaps the "burning man" of Germany, circa 1125, had some remote connection with the scorched footprints of York. In the old book Deutsche Sagen this strange report appears:

> In this year, A.D. 1125, a fiery man was haunting the mountains like an apparition. It was just at midnight and the Man went from one birchtree to another, and set it ablaze. The Watchman said he was like a glowing fire. He did that for three nights, and then no more. Georg Miltenberger, living in a hopfield near Railbach in the district of Freinstein, explained, 'On the first appearance on Sunday night, between eleven and twelve o'clock, far from my house, I saw a Man burning all over with fire. One could count all the ribs on his stomach. He continued his way from one landmark to another until after midnight he suddenly vanished. Many people were fear-stricken by his appearance because through his nose and mouth he belched fire while dashing hither and thither in all directions.'[1]

Another Unbelievable had the poor taste to show up uninvited at the wedding dance of King Alexander of Scotland in 1293. This poor fellow was not afire, he was simply stark naked. Worse still, he had neglected to wear any flesh. He appeared in nothing but his bare bones, according to the court records, and managed to put

quite a damper on the wedding festivities.

Five hundred years before this Black Period "a plague of frightening and terrible animals" swept over the Middle East, killing many people in Armenia and Assyria. The Chronicon of Denys de Tell-Mahre describes them thus: ". . . their muzzle was small and long, and they had great ears, like those of horses. The skin on their dorsal spine resembled the bristles of pigs, and stuck straight up." It was said that these fearsome beasts easily outwitted and killed many men. They raided villages and carried off children. For some reason, dogs did not bark at them. Whole herds of goats and sheep were devoured by them. They ravaged hundreds of square miles of villages before they vanished forever.

In Germany during this same period, some huge black animal was prowling the dark forests near Darmstadt, killing people off like flies. Finally, a local baron fought the beast. He managed to kill it but during the fight he suffered a wound which led to his death. A statue was erected to him in the tomb of his castle, both of which are still standing.

He was the Baron of Frankenstein and the first Frankenstein monster movie was actually filmed in the ruins of the old castle.

Hairy beasts and spectral dogs have always held a prominent place in occult lore. It is hard to find a book on psychic phenomena that does not mention at least one or two dog stories. England and France have yielded many. A phantom donkey with shaggy hair and "eyes like saucers" is supposed to have haunted Leeds, England, for many years and earned the nickname "Padfoot." It was said to have been missing one, possibly two legs.

Tring, Hartford, England, was visited frequently by a spectral dog in the nineteenth century. It was said to have been connected somehow with a lady who was drowned as a witch in 1751. Here is one description of the animal from the Book of Days, published in the 1800s:

> I was returning home late at night in a gig with the person who was driving. When we came near the spot where a portion of the gibbet had lately stood, we saw on the bank of the roadside a flame of fire as large as a man's hat. 'What's that?' I exclaimed. 'Hush!' said my companion, and suddenly pulling in his horse, came to a dead stop. I then saw an immense black dog just in front of our horse, the strangest looking creature I ever beheld. He was as big as a Newfoundland, but very gaunt, shaggy, with long ears and tail, eyes like balls of fire, and large, long teeth, for he opened his mouth and seemed to grin at us. In a few minutes the dog disappeared, seeming to vanish like a shadow, or to sink into the earth, and we drove on over the spot where he had lain.

White and black phantom horses have also appeared and disappeared mysteriously throughout history, their heavy hoofbeats resounding late at night across dozens of countries. Often they carry eerie riders dressed in black capes with hoods drawn over their heads.

Something wicked this way comes . . .

Every century has produced almost countless monster tales. The nineteenth century was no exception. Something was busy killing sheep and cattle along the border between Scotland and England in 1810. Whatever it was, it nipped the animals' juglar veins and sucked out their blood, killing eight or ten animals a night. Mobs of angry farmers took up arms and searched the area without success. But that September a dog was shot in a cornfield and the killings reportedly stopped.

A vampire dog? But wait, there's more.

Charles Fort, the late and much maligned researcher into the

deliberately forgotten past, unearthed various other accounts of blood-sucking sheep killers in the files of the British Museum in London. In his mind-dazzling book, LO!, he discusses the wave of vampirism that overtook Ireland in 1874.[2]

Beginning in January of that year, something killed as many as thirty sheep a night in Cavan, Ireland, making incisions in their throats and sucking out their blood. No flesh was eaten. The monster left behind elongated tracks, dog-like, yet larger and more powerful than a dog's. The menace spread to other communities and counties, while angry armed men scoured the countryside, blasting away at stray dogs.

By April 1874 the beast was prowling around Limerick, one hundred miles from Cavan, and several people were reportedly attacked and bitten by it. The Cavan Weekly News for April 17, stated that several of the victims had been placed in an insane asylum because they were "laboring under strange symptoms of insanity."

Damn the dearth of details in the Irish and British press! Journalists of that period had a frustrating way of writing ambling essays which only hinted of the facts. Could those victims in Limerick have been suffering from hydrophobia . . . rabies? Louis Pasteur did not develop his cure of inoculation until ten years later, in 1884.

One of the great "classics" of vampirism took place at Croglin Hall, an estate in Cumberland, England, in the summer of 1875. Miss Amelia Cranswell was awake in bed when an eerie, skeleton-like figure broke open her window and barged into her boudoir. Her screams alerted her two brothers, Edward and Michael, who broke down a locked door to reach her. They found her unconscious with blood pouring from wounds in her throat and shoulders. They saw the figure loping across the lawn outside and

pursued it, but it got away.

Other women in the neighborhood reported similar attacks by a grisly, bony apparition. The senseless wave of sheep killings also took place in Cumberland County and was repeated throughout England years later.

In 1905 the mysterious marauders were on the prowl again, this time near Badminton, England. Dogs were shot. The sheep killing continued sporadically. Posses of irate farmers were formed, ready to blast anything that moved near their grazing fields. By December a total of thirty sheep had fallen prey to the bloodsucker near Gravesend alone.

A police sergeant in Gloucestershire, talking to reporter from the London Daily Mail, remarked, "I have seen two of the carcasses myself and can say definitely that it is impossible for it to be the work of a dog. Dogs are not vampires, and do not suck the blood of a sheep, and leave the flesh almost untouched."

Not a dog? What was it, then? A bat? But animal and human victims of the tiny vampire bats do not die immediately, even when infected with rabies. And the little bats can hardly drink them dry of blood. Furthermore, there were no known vampire bats in Europe. As for wolves, the last known wolf was killed in 1712 in Ireland.

Then, as in all the previous cases, the killings stopped and the monster simply vanished. This is an important characteristic of these incidents. These monsters appear for only a short time, are seen by many people, commit all kinds of outrageous acts, and then vanish without a trace.

In March of 1906 something was prowling around Windsor Castle, attacking sheep. Seventeen miles away, near Guildford, the mystery monster slaughtered fifty-one sheep in a single night.

Another kind of monster turned up in Russia in 1893, terrorizing the district of Orel, south of Moscow. It chose to attack women

and children, killing several. Surviving victims described it as being a long, black creature with a blunt muzzle, round, stand-up ears, and a long, smooth tail. The army was sent out to track it down, beating the bushes and covering every square inch of ground in the affected area. It left behind enormous dog-like footprints. Nothing more.

October 1925, Edale, Derbyshire, England. Herds of sheep were being destroyed by a huge black animal that ripped its prey to shreds. This one was not a bloodsucker. The usual armed bands launched a search. The killer was never caught or identified.

On August 1, 1966, the Associated Press reported that a frightening animal was loose in Jessore, East Pakistan. It killed a baby girl, mauled a rickshaw driver and a woman, and destroyed a number of cattle. The town lived in terror for several days while police and soldiers conducted a fruitless search. According to the police the creature appeared only at night and "vanished" immediately after attacking people. Apparently it was not a tiger or any other known animal.

Packs of ferocious wild dogs still inhabit the deep bush in India, although their numbers have been thinning in modern times. They have reddish brown hair and look exactly like what they are: mean dogs. They have been known to attack cattle and even human beings. Generally speaking, however, they regard man as their natural enemy, as do most wild animals, and try to steer clear of them. It is unlikely that a pack of these dogs could have traversed the almost impassable Himalaya Mountains into Russia in 1893, and then could have swum to England to feast upon the king's sheep.

No. Something else is abroad here. Something that kills by making almost surgical-like incisions and then drains off the blood. Once the deed is done, the perpetrators vanish into thin air.

Although the incidents have received little or no publicity, there

has been a rash of these vampiric attacks in the United States in the past three years. The best-known case is the sudden death of Snippy the horse in Colorado in September 1967. Something or somebody cut Snippy's throat expertly, and his demise inspired a lot of publicity, particularly since his owner chose to blame the flying saucers then being seen in the area.

In West Virginia and Ohio, where UFOs and monsters have also been active, cattle and dogs have met a sudden and enigmatic end. One cow was sliced neatly in half, as if by a giant pair of scissors, in Ohio in December 1967. Numerous dogs have been found with their blood gone and no trace of injury on their corpses.

Probably events of this sort have been occurring regularly throughout history, but only those which inspire large panics have received any notoriety and been recorded in the newspapers and history books. We can assume that for each published incident there may have been scores of others that have passed unnoticed and are now totally forgotten. The history and folklore of almost every country in the world, extending back to ancient times, are filled with stories of monstrous hairy creatures who attacked and slaughtered domestic animals and human beings and then managed to elude armies of pursuers. These incidents undoubtedly contributed to the massive, unscientific literature on werewolves—animals which were actually evil human beings in magical disguises. There have been so many cases of this sort of thing that we even have a word for it: lycanthropy.

Most languages have a definite term for werewolf. In France they are loup-garou; in Spanish, lob ambre; in Portuguese, lob omem. Wolves are nasties in any language. Fortunately, they are now extinct, or almost extinct. Fearsome packs of the marauding beasts are now quite rare, except for remote regions of northern Canada and obscure sections of the Soviet Union. But occasionally a wolf still turns up in the United States. Mr. Marvin Meade shot

one in March 1967, near Gorham, Illinois. His kill was so unusual that it was discussed in the local newspapers and he was paid a fifteen-dollar bounty by the government of Jackson County.

The werewolf, on the other hand, can presumably pop up anywhere and skillfully elude hunters, since it possesses human rather than animal cunning, being, according to folklore, a black magician in league with the devil.

Could some men somehow transform themselves into fiendish hairy monsters which prowl when the moon is full? If this were even remotely possible we might have a bizarre explanation for the horrifying animals which seem to appear and disappear so easily. It is ridiculous, of course, but remember that we are attempting to deal with the ridiculous and the unbelievable. Werewolves might properly belong in the ranks of the milk and hoop snakes. Then again. . . .

Controversial religious texts dating back two thousand years tell how Christ ordered his followers to stone a pitiful beggar. They were taken aback but obeyed, and as their stones fell upon the wretch he slowly changed into a loathsome hairy beast with fiery red eyes, having been the devil in disguise.

For twenty-five years a gentleman named Peter Stubb allegedly terrorized the countryside of sixteenth century Germany by donning a magical belt made of wolfskin given to him by the devil (who was apparently one of his few friends) and transforming himself into a giant wolf. He specialized in killing hapless females, although he occasionally knocked off a cow or sheep just to keep his hand in. His own daughter had a child by him, adding incest to his long list of crimes. And during one dull season he killed and ate his own son.

Finally, the agitated populace turned out with guns and dogs and tracked the monstrous wolf down. When they had it cornered at last, Herr Stubb appeared miraculously before their eyes. He was

given a fair trial. But first he was closely questioned by the authorities, and during that interrogation his fingernails were accidently pulled out, and a few of his bones were broken. Perhaps these proceedings convinced him that it might be wise to confess openly. Following his fair trial, he was tortured a bit more, and then his head was mounted on a pole outside the village of Bedburg to warn away other werewolves, no doubt.

His magical wolfskin belt was never recovered.

Among the classics of lycanthropy is the well-documented story of the werewolf of Le Gevaudan, France, circa. 1764-67. This beast walked like a man but was covered with hair, had a snout like a pig, and pointed ears. It killed many people, tearing out hearts and drinking blood with wild abandon. Children from several villages fell prey to it. A peasant farmer named Jean-Pierre Pourcher was among the first to actually shoot at it in September 1764. He said he saw it sneaking up on his house so he grabbed his rifle and blasted away, apparently without effect. The beast ran off. M. Pourcher described it as being the size of a donkey, covered with hair, and having something like horseshoes on its feet. It left behind the kind of hoofprints so often associated with the devil.

A few months later the monster attacked a group of children near the village of Chanaleilles and they fought back with knives and pitchforks, finally driving it off but not before it had mauled and killed two of their number.

King Louis XV heard the reports and dispatched a company of cavalry to the scene. The soldiers found the tracks and followed them. They even caught a glimpse of the Unbelievable and fired at it. But, as usual, it got away.

As the killings continued the usual army of farmers spread out to hunt the demon down. In the end, a man named Jean Chastel won a place in French history by shooting it. He had loaded his rifle with silver bullets (it being a well-established superstition that

only silver bullets can kill werewolves and vampires) and was nervously reading a prayer book when the monster stomped out of the woods and headed straight for him. He fired point blank, hitting it in the chest and terminating its three-year career of horror. The huge body was paraded triumphantly through the villages and then was supposedly shipped to Versailles so the king could see it. We say "supposedly" because it apparently disappeared along the way or was buried when the stench got to be too much for its transporters. The ending of the otherwise detailed report is unaccountably hazy, raising some speculation that the authorities were trying to hide something about its identity or final description. But what? Was the creature actually more like a man than an animal? We will never know.

There are many books on lycanthropy, a number of which go to the trouble of explaining just how you can turn yourself into a werewolf. The great flaw in most of these formulas is that you must smear yourself with a special "witches' salve" composed of almost unobtainable ingredients. And most of the werewolf stories seem of dubious origin, handed down from generation to generation in cheap pamphlets and little-known "secret" books. Some of these seem to have been based on tenuous letters passing along local rumors and gossip, which may have been founded on the enigmatic appearances of mystery beasts rather than the provable existence of a genuine werewolf.

One puzzling werewolf story which is possibly of that type appears word-for-word in two different American paperback books published in recent years by two different companies and credited to two different authors. It is very neatly vague. The time is "about fifty years ago." The place is a county in Wales called Merionethshire. A woman identified only as Miss St. Denis was walking away from a railway station somewhere in Merionethshire when she became aware of a figure behind her. She turned and

faced an erect creature covered with hair, a head like a wolf, blazing eyes, and dripping white fangs. Showing great presence of mind, Miss St Denis whipped out a flashlight (we can question whether flashlights existed and were in use in Wales fifty years ago) and directed the beam at the monster. It instantly faded away into thin air.

While the werewolf legends are open to debate, there are many authentic cases of human vampirism; some of them occurred as recently as the last decade. In his book Sex and the Supernatural Brad Steiger discusses several celebrated cases in which demented men and women found sexual gratification in acts of brutal murder, which included drinking their victims' blood. There have been numerous ghoulish affairs in which the pseudovampires dug up fresh graves and mutilated the corpses or even ate them. In their way, these unfortunate characters seem to have been obsessed with the same frightening appetites that drove the Leopard Men to terrorize whole generations in West Africa. Appetites that would have sickened even the Marquis De Sade.

The Leopard Cult plagued Guinea and Senegal for many centuries, but during the last decade the authorities have made a serious effort to wipe them out. Leopard Men don leopard skins, grip razor-sharp, claw-like instruments in their hands, and crawl about the bush trying to imitate in act and appearance the animal after which the cult was named. Their victims, who are supposed to number in the thousands, look as if they had been savagely mauled by a leopard.

In case you have never seen the animal kill, the leopard, like most of the big cats, attacks by gripping the human prey about the head and shoulders while its hind claws raise up and rake away at the stomach, disemboweling the victim. Man-eating tigers, who are usually injured or lame and thus unable to go after ordinary prey, prefer to pounce from behind, seizing the head and snapping the

spine in a single quick frenzy of movement.

The African Leopard Men share the commonly held primitive belief that they can draw upon the strength and spirit of wild animals by wearing their hides. The cult is also cannibalistic and one of the initiation rites requires that the plebe must produce a member of his own family for dinner after the ceremony. What a way to get rid of your mother-in-law!

The Leopard Cult was last heard from in the early 1960s. There have since been many changes in the countries affected by the cult, and perhaps they are no longer roasting their mothers-in-law but are sitting home and watching television instead.

It is not very likely that the Leopard Cult ever existed in England or France, nor would such a cult ruthlessly massacre fifty cattle or sheep in a single night. The real culprits are still at large.

Every so often some newspaper describes how a tame, polite little house cat suddenly turned into a ferocious monster and successfully drove off an unwary burglar who dared to invade its home grounds. Cats are odd little beasts and have managed to surround themselves with all kinds of legend and folklore.

Cat cemeteries have been found in ancient Egypt. Beautiful, lovingly carved cat statues have been discovered in ancient tombs. Winged cats are depicted in the ancient hieroglyphics. The cat was even deified and worshipped.

During the Dark Ages, the cat acquired a somewhat more sinister reputation. Practicioners of witchcraft were alleged to have used the animals as "familiars." The cat became a spy, sent to peer into windows and report back to the witch. It is said that witches could call upon the little beasts to perform all kinds of foul and ugly deeds.

One of the most fascinating of these tales involves a lady who practiced vampirism in her spare time. Her name was Countess

Elizabeth Bathory. She lived in a charming old castle in Csejthe, Hungary, in the early 1600s. Life was dull in Csejthe so the countess developed a quiet little hobby. She would invite local peasant girls to the castle and entertain herself by stringing them up in the dining room, slicing open their arteries, and drinking their blood. After a few years of this, the local townspeople became rather annoyed and grumbled to the authorities. On New Year's Eve 1610, a group of soldiers and policemen, led by the local governor, assaulted the castle and caught the countess and a few of her select friends in the act of celebrating the New Year by lapping up the blood of a very unhappy young girl.

Upset by the intrusion, the countess is supposed to have uttered an extravagant curse, calling upon ninety-nine cats to come to her rescue. Shortly afterwards, by a most curious coincidence, the local priest who accompanied the raiders was climbing a staircase in the castle when six cats suddenly pounced upon him, badly scratching and biting him. The soldiers chased the animals but they seemed to vanish into thin air.

The countess became the subject of a sensational trial and, because she was of royal lineage, she was condemned to a life in solitary confinement. There are extensive records of this incredible affair and you can find a carefully documented summary in William Seabrook's Witchcraft.

Events of this type were seemingly common up until the eighteenth century and undoubtedly contributed to the folklore surrounding witches and their evil cats.

There is another kind of phantom cat which occasionally appears and disappears suddenly, even in heavily populated areas. This one is huge in size, resembling somewhat a lithe black panther. It has turned up in many places where panthers were, and are, unknown. Pantherless England has had a number of sightings

of this beast over the years.

In the fall of 1967 our giant mystery "panther" caused considerable consternation when he took a stroll along the quiet streets in Connecticut. A bus driver in West Rock could hardly believe his eyes when the great beast ambled past him and turned a corner on Valley Street. Hordes of policemen descended on the area and searched for what was described as "a baby tiger." No circus or zoo was missing such a beast. No trace of it was found. Had the driver been mistaken?

Soon afterwards, Connecticut State Senator Lucy T. Hammer and her husband Thorvald were sitting down to breakfast when a huge animal strolled past their home near Bran-ford.

"My husband went out and watched him walking in a most stately manner down our path," Senator Hammer said. "The animal went around a bend and my husband lost sight of him. He must have gone into the woods."

Police and game wardens searched the Hammers' forty-acre estate. All they found was the carcass of a dead squirrel.

It was sliced in half.

FOUR

Flying Felines

A CAT named Thomas was a nationwide sensation in 1959. His picture was published from coast to coast and he starred on several television shows. He was about the only interesting thing that ever happened to the little town of Pinesville, West Virginia, and its seven hundred hardworking inhabitants. Thomas was no ordinary cat. He possessed a pair of "wings" and whenever he got angry he would flutter them up and down like a grounded gooney bird.

Unfortunately he could not really fly. But that didn't seem to matter much to the long lines of open-mouthed West Virginians who happily paid ten cents a head to glimpse this wonder.

Young Douglas Shelton, fifteen, had captured the cat early in May 1959, while hunting in the hills. "My dog treed it," he explained later. "I almost took a shot at it with my .22, but then I saw it was a cat so I shinnied up the tree and caught it."

He quickly realized that he had a most unusual prize. The animal had two peculiar lumps growing out of its back. Wings, without a doubt.

"It wasn't wild," Doug said. "It acted like it was used to people.

And its manners were pretty good until you pulled those wings. Then it would get mad and start clawing."

He carried the cat home triumphantly and it adopted his family. Word soon flashed across the hills that a marvelous winged cat had been found and the stampede started. A reporter from the Beckley, West Virginia, Post-Herald, Fern Miniacs, was one of the first to examine the animal with an objective eye. Although Doug had named the cat Thomas, Miniacs discovered it was really a female. The name stuck anyway.

"It's thirty inches long," Miniacs reported, "has a tail like a squirrel, and two perfectly shaped wings, one on each side. The wings are boneless but evidently have gristles in them. Each wing is about nine inches long."

Thomas looked like a Persian cat and had long, beautiful hair. Her feet were slightly oversized and she was considered somewhat larger overall than the average cat. The wings were furry and soft, but felt gritty near the body. A local conservation officer inspected the animal and said he thought it was just shedding its coat, much to the annoyance of the growing cult of "winged cat" believers in Pinesville.

An anonymous veterinarian traveled from Baltimore, Maryland, to look Thomas over. "I thought at first," he said sagely, "that the wings were the result of a freak of nature . . . an attempt to grow an extra pair of legs. But now I don't know what they are."

Stories of Doug Shelton's amazing find reached New York City and Dave Garroway, then the M.C. of NBC's "Today" show, invited Thomas and owner to the big town. Though it was obviously beneath the dignity of a winged cat, Doug's mother insisted that he and Thomas travel to the city by train. She was afraid to let them fly.

On June 8, 1959, Thomas confronted the NBC cameras like a bored pro while Doug shyly told his story to millions. Jack

Lescoulie was acting M.C. that day, and Doug admitted that he had been offered as much as four hundred dollars for the animal, but he was not tempted to sell her. Thomas apparently was not very interested in the furor surrounding her, but fame gave her expensive eating habits. She preferred fresh meat and mackerel fish over ordinary canned cat foods.

Pinesville now had a real honest-to-goodness celebrity in its midst. People traveled for miles along the treacherous mountain roads to look at the animal, and the Shelton family realized they had a good thing going. Doug hauled in the dimes and Mrs. Shelton charged reporters a nominal sum if they wanted to take pictures of Thomas.

"Folks around here estimated that Douglas took in over two thousand dollars with that cat," one resident observed.

Doug, however, claimed that "about a thousand people" paid ten cents apiece to gape at the feline. That would have netted him around one hundred dollars; hardly enough to keep the winged wonder in fresh fish.

As the lines continued to form and townspeople began to mumble about all the money Doug was making, a new drama unfolded. Mrs. Charles Hicks, a softspoken gray-haired widow on the Pinesville-Baileysville road, announced that Thomas really belonged to her.

"I don't want to cause any trouble," she noted gently. "I just want my cat back."

According to her story the cat had been given to her by a friend who had purchased it in a pet shop in California for twenty-five dollars. She had named it Mitzi and she said that her family, friends, and neighbors were used to seeing its wings and could verify her claims.

"One day I put some drops in Mitzi's ears," Mrs. Hicks told reporters, "and she ran away. That Shelton boy found her four

days later."

Douglas, still busy raking in the dimes, refused to turn Thomas over to her. So she sued.

On October 5, 1959, Thomas had his day in court. The circuit judge listened soberly to Mrs. Hicks' claim of ownership. Then Doug Shelton entered the courtroom with Exhibit A, a beautiful oversized Persian cat, under one arm and Exhibit B, a shoe box, under the other. A surprised murmur rose from the crowd as Thomas studied the courtroom with haughty disdain. Something was missing. Thomas' wings were gone.

"She shed her wings in July," Doug Shelton admitted in embarrassed tones. "There they are, Your Honor." He opened the shoe box and displayed two large balls of fur.

"That is not my Mitzi," Mrs. Hicks snapped icily.

The Judge awarded Mrs. Hicks one dollar in damages "for her trouble." Doug Shelton was given full custody of the now rather ordinary cat.

We happened to pass through Pinesville in 1966, and we stopped and tried to locate, without success, the principals in this case. We can only assume that Thomas lived out her life in obscurity, surrounded by scrapbooks recounting her past glories. To hear the townspeople tell it, she was at least the richest cat in Pinesville.

Winged cats are not as rare as you might think. In June 1966 a large black feline with apparently workable wings reportedly terrorized farm animals and family pets around the little community of Alfred, Ontario, in Canada.

Ontario seems to have had an epidemic of winged cats that year. According to a UPI dispatch, one had been shot near the village of Lachute, about twenty-four miles north of Montreal, and another had been killed near Ottawa. Details on these two incidents were

skimpy and efforts to uncover more complete reports have been in vain.

On Friday, June 24, 1966, a confectioner named Jean J. Revers heard a noise outside his home in Alfred, and he saw something "looking like a big black cat—but with hairy wings on its back" sailing after a neighbor's cat, a pet owned by the Arthur Lavole family.

"It screamed like hell," Revers said. "And it tried to get away by making gliding jumps of fifty or sixty feet—wings extended—after a good running start. It could stay a foot or so above the ground."

Revers grabbed his rifle and blazed away, pumping five bullets into the howling, fluttering animal.

"I couldn't believe my eyes when I saw the thing." Ontario Police Constable Terence Argall remarked. Revers and Lavole had called the police immediately after shooting it. "Its head resembled a cat's, but a pair of needle sharp fangs five-eighths of an inch long protruded from the mouth, measurements showed," Argall continued. "It had a cat's whiskers, tail, and ears, and its eyes were dark, greenish and glassy. I never saw anything like it before in my life."

The animal's pelt was sleek black and it had a wing span of fourteen inches. It weighed about ten pounds.

After newspaper photographers took pictures of it, the carcass was buried in Revers' backyard.

But, like the Pineville winged wonder, this story had a disappointing ending. A few days later the animal was exhumed and shipped off to the veterinary lab at Kemptville Agricultural School where an autopsy was performed.

"The bat-like wings protruding from its back were found to be growths of thick, matted fur," the lab technicians announced. "It was just an ordinary black cat."

The explanation did not sit well with the townspeople who had

been terrorized by the thing for weeks and claimed they had actually seen it on the wing.

Our scholarly conclusion is that three or more large black cats with "growths of thick, matted fur" and vampire-bat-type fangs visited Ontario in 1966.

One of these days some of their relatives may come back.

FIVE

The Incomprehensibles

A KNOT of students and teachers gathered on the snow-covered lawns of the campus of Cornell University in New York State early one winter morning about four decades ago. Spread out before them in the freshly fallen snow was a long line of large, deep animal tracks.

"My God!" the professors cried in unison. "It's a rhinoceros!"

They cautiously followed the huge imprints across the campus to the edge of Beebee Lake, the local reservoir, which was frozen over at the time. The tracks continued on across the ice until they ended in a gaping hole.

The professors stared at each other in amazement. Obviously a renegade rhinoceros had blundered onto the quiet campus during the night and had blindly charged across the ice, meeting its doom in the college reservoir! Everyone stopped drinking the tap water while hooks were lowered into the lake to probe for the luckless rhino.

Years later, humorist H. Allen Smith finally let the rhino out of the bag in his book The Compleat Practical Joker. A young man

named Hugh Troy had taken a wastepaper basket fashioned out of a rhino's foot (similar to the old elephant foot umbrella stands), filled it with scrap metal to weigh it down, and tied two long ropes to it. Then he and friends had stayed up all night, manipulating the foot from a distance with the ropes, raising and lowering it into the fresh snow. They carefully planted rhino footprints at proper intervals all over the campus, their own footprints falling some distance away. The hole in the ice was a final stroke of genius, you must admit.

Those of us who chase Unbelievables are always haunted by the realization that Hugh Troy is still out there somewhere. But very few of our monsters can be explained as the work of industrious practical jokers. Since such wits derive most of their pleasure from the reactions of their victims and the resultant publicity, it is highly unlikely that they would bother to plant their prankish footprints in remote, seldom-visited areas where they are not apt to be discovered. Nor would any sensible joker risk repeating his gag night after night, week after week in the same area.

Was a practical joker on the loose in Australia back in 1890? A huge animal thirty feet long instituted a brief reign of terror around the village of Euroe that year. It left behind gigantic footprints to confirm its awesome size. Forty men turned out with nets and guns and made repeated attempts to trap the animal. But, like Alice's Cheshire cat, our Incomprehensibles seem to melt away leaving only a whimsical smile.

A Mr. Hoad of Adelaide, Australia, however, reportedly did find the body of one of our Incomprehensibles in September 1883. It was described as having a headless, pig-like body, with an appendage that looked like a lobster's tail. A few months earlier another unknown caused great excitement in Masterton, New Zealand. People who saw it said that it was very large, with a broad muzzle, short legs and curly hair. It killed dogs.

Australia has long been haunted by a giant cat-like creature which has killed many sheep and frightened hundreds of people. Even though it is reportedly the size of a leopard and leaves behind big footprints, no one has been able to catch it or shoot it—with one exception. A man named George Sumner said that he shot one near Katanning back in 1905. It had gray and black stripes and a cat-like head. "I feel sure it was not a domestic cat gone wild," he reported. "Like a fool, I did not remove the skin and send it to a museum."

Another Australian, R. F. Brown, claimed that he caught one of the cats in a net but after a five minute battle the fifty-to-sixty pound beast got away.

Mr. and Mrs. Ted Simms were camping in Queensland, Australia, on June 5, 1957, when one of these big cats terrified their dog. "It looked rather like a leopard," Mrs. Simms said. "It was too big for a domestic or wild cat, more the size of a dog. Only it had short legs, pricked, pointed ears, and a long tail. My husband estimated its length to be approximately five feet from its nose to the tip of its tail."

The husband of another witness, Hugh Kennedy, described it this way: "It was a large cat-like animal, similar to a lynx. It was larger than my blue cattle dog, possibly eighteen to twenty inches in height, tawny colored, with a long, smooth, cat-like tail. The body was long, narrow, and sleek.

"The most frightening part was the cat-like head, small pointed ears, and terrific fangs. It hissed like a cat and used its front paws to keep off the dogs. Unfortunately, by the time the wife had returned to the house to get a rifle, the animal had vanished. However, it was afraid neither of dogs nor humans."

The town of Emmaville, Australia, was caught up in a routine monster panic in the early 1960s when a beast killed seventy sheep, sometimes eating four in one night and leaving nothing but the

hides. Although many people saw the culprit, it was never caught or killed. One witness described the thing that ran in front of his auto headlights as being about two feet high, with slender back legs, smallish back paws, a heavy head, a long tail with a blunt end, and irregular, black and white stripes on both body and tail.

In Furred Animals of Australia, author Ellis Troughton remarked:

> Although such an animal has been reported on several occasions, no specimen has ever reached any museum to verify the occurrence scientifically. There are often simple explanations for such reports, but the consistency of the accounts suggests the possibility of the presence of some large carnivorous marsupial of the dasyurid family (which includes the thylacine).
>
> In future, observers should make every effort to obtain both the skull and complete skin of a specimen and ensure the preservation by heavy salting before forwarding the remains to the local museum . . . The failure of observers to obtain any parts of the hide, hair, or skull, casts much doubt over the reports of such an animal.

The thylacine, referred to above, is the Tasmanian tiger, a freakish and elusive beast found on the island of Tasmania. It has been caught and caged. It looks something like a cross between a mongrel dog and a hyena, has stripes on its back, and comes equipped with a kangaroo-like pouch in which it carries its young. Before one of these animals was finally brought to bay, you can imagine the kind of reaction Tasmanian witnesses got when they reported seeing a giant striped dog carrying its young in a pouch.

Gippsland, Australia, has produced another Unbelievable. It is a

giant earthworm which looks like a garden hose and grows to as much as ten feet in length. It burrows deep in the earth and is hard to catch because it can coat itself with a very slippery lubricating fluid. But it has been caught and studied, as has another monstrous Australian worm known as the Megascolides. In the Bulletin of the New York Zoological Society (March–April 1938), Charles Barrett announced, "I have seen many specimens extending seven feet when extended, and a number about two feet longer. My record Megascolides was over ten feet."

If you ever go fishing for a sea serpent you should probably use a Megascolides for bait. The trick to catching one, according to the experts, is to tie it in a knot so it can't burrow into the ground and get away from you. It can squirt its lubricating fluid a couple of feet, so wear old clothes.

Perhaps giant earthworms may account for some of the grotesque snake stories that have been produced in nearly every state over the years. Enormous reptiles, sometimes described as being twenty feet or more in length, are seen with astonishing frequency in the United States but, so far as science knows, no snakes of such unusual size exist here at all. Minor constrictors such as the king snake and the black snake are common enough and can grow to six or seven feet in length on a diet of rodents and smaller snakes. But they avoid men. In fact, contrary to all the Hollywood jungle movies, even the largest known boa constrictors will not wantonly attack anything they can not swallow—which, of course, includes man. In self-defense a boa will wrap itself around a man, bite him, and hammer at his head with its bony snout, inspiring considerable discomfort. But there is only one reasonably documented story about a boa attempting to swallow a human being. This is supposed to have occurred in the jungles of Burma during World War II, when some Japanese soldiers found the feet

of one of their comrades sticking out from the mouth of a giant reptile.

Nevertheless, every now and then someone like Orland Parker of Kenton, Ohio, comes up with a new snake story. Parker claimed that he was horseback riding near his home on June 9, 1946, when a snake eight feet long and four inches in diameter appeared in his path. The horse threw him and the snake coiled around Parker's leg, breaking his ankle. Then it bit the horse for good measure and slithered off into the woods. A search party went looking for it but found nothing.

In July of that same year, the Willard Tollinger family in Flat Rock, Indiana, reportedly saw a twenty-foot snake coiled up in the shallow water of a river. Pigs and other small animals had been disappearing mysteriously in the area that summer.

Some years ago when we were playing with two-headed sand boas and giving occasional lectures on herpetology, several wild snake stories were brought to our attention. There was, for example, a man who claimed that he communicated with rattlesnakes through mental telepathy. A claim we were inclined to doubt since snakes are creatures of instinct rather than intelligence. About a dozen years ago a man from Massachusetts approached us after a speech and soberly described how he and a friend had encountered a gigantic serpent the year before. They had been hunting and were riding a jeep along a rugged dirt road through a dense forest when a small animal darted in front of them. It was either a fox or a dog. They were not sure which because it was traveling so fast. Directly behind it there followed a huge brown and green reptile "as big around as a truck tire." It slithered across the road very rapidly, but was so long that it took several seconds to pass. The men were not inclined to stop and get out of their jeep for a closer look. They estimated that it must have been at least twenty feet in length.

Could unknown snakes and varieties of the Tasmanian tiger have caused the waves of sheep killing in England and Ireland? It is not very likely. Besides, everyone knows that St. Patrick drove all the snakes out of Ireland (although a few harmless varieties remained behind). We can probably rule out vampire bats, snakes, and known breeds of wildcats in those cases.

Pennsylvania also seems to be the habitat for an unidentified killer of livestock. In 1945-46 there were numerous reports of a frightening Incomprehensible around Lebanon and Pottstown which feasted on cattle and dogs. No one really got a good look at it but many heard its strange call. It sounded something like a woman screaming or a baby crying. Store that little detail in the back of your mind.

Back in the early 1930s sheep and small animals began to disappear with regularity around Campbell Lake in South Dakota. Then, in 1934, a farmer reported that a giant four-legged, dragon-like creature had forced his tractor off the road and upset his digestive system as it went scurrying by. Huge tracks were discovered leading through the mud to Campbell Lake. Was Hugh Troy at it again?

A boy named Donald Neff next discovered some unusual bones in the mud of the nearby Elm River. Professor James D. Bump of the Museum of the State School of Mines, in Rapid City, South Dakota, took a look at the skeletal remains and identified them as belonging to a mosasaur, a creature known to have been extinct for 130 million years. Had that anonymous farmer run smack into a mosasaur? Would such bones survive the erosion of 130 million years?

Suppose you were walking along the bank of a river near your home and you came face to face with a prehistoric monster? To whom would you report it, and do you think anyone would take

you seriously? This was the dilemma faced by the late Harold T. Wilkins, a scholarly researcher and distinguished British author, who modestly claimed that he had personally encountered two prehistoric amphibians in the waters of a quiet creek at East Looe, Cornwall, in England. At 11:30 A.M. Tuesday, July 5, 1949, Wilkins and a friend reportedly stumbled upon "two remarkable saurians" fifteen to twenty feet long. They resembled the ancient plesiosaur and Wilkins noted, "What was amazing were their dorsal parts: ridged, serrated, and like the old Chinese pictures of dragons. Gulls swooped down towards the one in the rear, which had a large piece of orange peel on his dorsal parts." Their heads were a "bottle-green," according to Wilkins' account in his book Strange Mysteries of Time and Space.

A year earlier, beginning in February 1948, Florida was in an uproar over the sudden presence of a giant Unbelievable which traipsed around the beaches near Clearwater and left big three-toed tracks in its wake. The largest toe measured thirteen and a half inches, and it was possible to estimate the weight from the indentations. Whatever made those imprints had to weigh somewhere in the neighborhood of three tons.

Mr. Ivan T. Sanderson was doing a television series for NBC at the time, and he flew to Florida with a camera crew to make measurements and plaster casts, and to interview the many witnesses. Fishermen and residents in the area told of seeing something fifteen or twenty feet tall waddling around the marshes and beaches on two legs. Four different pilots claimed they had seen something huge and black thrashing around the river banks of the Suwannee.

One witness lowered his voice and explained in embarrassed tones, "Maybe I'm crazy . . . but that damned thing looked like a giant penguin to me!"

The creature was seen sporadically from February to October

1948, then, like all the others, it simply faded away.

Always conscious of possible hoaxes, Sanderson asked some engineer friends to design a machine which could produce such deep imprints. They poured over their drawing boards and finally concluded the only device capable of duplicating the tracks would have to be extremely expensive to build. It would also be very hard to control, since only the two imprint-making "feet" could touch the ground. It would have to be small enough to maneuver through trees and thickets without leaving traces that would give the hoax away but big enough to weigh three tons. It was, they concluded, easier to accept the existence of a fifteen-foot-tall penguin than the existence of such a machine.

A fine line separates our Incomprehensibles from the Unbelievables. This funny little island in space seems to harbor all kinds of incomprehensible beasts still unknown to science. But next week or next year Australia's mysterious cat may get himself caught. Then some scientist will write a learned paper about it and brand it with a fancy Latin name. There may even come a time when the Florida "three-toes" will be cornered. Three-toed tracks almost identical to those found in 1948 have reappeared in other places in recent years. A set of these tracks were discovered along the banks of the Monongahela River in Pennslyvania in 1966.

The Unbelievables are more rare and less peripatetic. Sometimes they are seen only once and never heard from again. But they can pop up almost anywhere—in Central Park or Disneyland, or in your own backyard.

Consider the "walking fir-cone" of Kent, England.

"The thing was covered with quills, had a long snout and a short tail. It was as big as an Alsatian dog and had large claws. You might have thought it was a walking fir-cone."

The witness who offered this incredible description was a policeman named S. Bishop. The thing had meandered past him in

Dumpton Park, Ramsgate, Kent, England, on April 16, 1954. He did what anyone else would have done. He called the cops. Other police descended on the area and searched every bush but the "walking fir-cone" was gone. Constable Bishop had seen something that does not exist.

SIX

Giants in the Earth
or
"Marvelous Big Men and Great Enmity"

NOT SO long ago, there lived upon this planet a race of human beings who were ten feet tall. They inhabited Africa, Europe, North and South America, and the Aleutian Islands. We know a great deal about them. We know that they had nasty, even evil dispositions. Some of them were different from modern man only in that their huge jaws were graced with a double row of sharp teeth, somewhat akin to the double teeth found in some reptiles and fish. We know that large numbers of this fearsome race still existed into the seventeenth century.

We know all these things because giant human bones have been unearthed all over the world, and the tales and legends of many Indian tribes offer extensive detail as to their nature and living habits. But no scientist has ever bothered to collect and study the enormous amount of available data, perhaps because such giants are supposed to be scientific impossibilities. Or perhaps because

such a study would explode too many beloved scientific theories. So scattered museums are filled with giant bones, and fringe scholars are left to contemplate the meaning of it all. Were these giants a race apart or were they an important but neglected part of mankind?

Although the "giant myth" began in earliest times, we can begin with the biblical reference in Genesis (6:4): "There were giants in the earth in those days; and also after that, when the sons of God came in unto the daughters of men, and they bare children to them, the same became mighty men which were of old, men reknown."

That verse, like many other parts of Genesis, was derived from The Book of the Secrets of Enoch. Enoch claimed that angels conducted him on a tour of the universe and that he was ordered to write down all that he saw and learned. Some flying saucer buffs, including Dr. Carl Sagan, an exo-biologist at Cornell, imply that Enoch really went for a ride in a UFO. In any case, during a visit to the "fifth heaven" (the fifth planet, maybe, Jupiter) Enoch saw great giants with "their faces withered, and the silence of their mouths perpetual." Far from being "sons of God," Enoch describes them as the "Grigori"—"fallen angels." In Chapter 18 he asserts that these Grigori "broke through their vows on the shoulder of the hill Ermon and saw the daughters of men how good they are, and took to themselves wives, and befouled the earth with their deeds, who in all times of their age made lawlessness and mixing, and giants were born and marvellous big men and great enmity."

The legends of many isolated Indian tribes agree that the giants were evil-doers and that the world is well rid of them. The Bible and many other ancient records suggest that the giants mated with normal women and produced a half-breed race which was large in size and short in intelligence, just as many large members of the animal kingdom, such as the dinosaur, seem to have had smallish brains. If this is true, then it is understandable that the giant race

would eventually become extinct, wiped out by stupidity.

Up until the twentieth century, modern man remained relatively short in stature, averaging just a trifle over five feet tall. The famed Watusi tribe in Africa, who range between six and seven feet tall, must have seemed like enormous giants to the early European explorers. Today any American basketball team can match the Watusi in size. The Watusi have an agrarian culture and are not especially fierce or warlike. They prefer raising cattle to bashing in the heads of the diminutive tribes around them.

England has always had extensive legends about giants, backed up by enormous structures of unknown origin, such as Stonehenge, and huge designs carved into the ground and covering many acres. Most of these designs are fully discernible only from the air. The Cerne Abbas giant, for example, was carved into the British hills aeons ago and clearly depicts a huge human carrying a club. England, Ireland, and North and South America contain thousands of great mounds, artificially constructed of earth, which have apparently survived as the sole evidence of some ancient, forgotten culture. Although Indians are often credited with the building of these mounds, they have nothing in their ancient lore to account for them.

An old book titled History and Antiquities of Allerdale offers this undated description of a giant found in Cumberland, England, sometime in the Middle Ages. It is supposed to be "A True Report of Hugh Hodson, of Thorneway."

> The said gyant was buried four yards deep in the ground, which is now a corn field. He was four yards and a half long, and was in complete armour: his sword and battle-axe lying by him. His sword was two spans broad, and more than two yards long. The head of his battle-axe a yard long, and the shaft of it all of iron, as thick as a

man's thigh, and more than two yards long.

His teeth were six inches long, and two inches broad; his forehead was more than two spans and a half broad. His chin bone could contain three pecks of oatmeale. His armour, sword, and battle-axe are at Mr. Sand's of Redington, and at Mr. Wyber's, at St. Bees.

A man fifteen feet tall, dressed in armor—a true Goliath! We have no way of knowing what happened to this interesting find. The bones and armor may have been scattered eventually among dozens of souvenir collectors.

In those early times the discovery of bones and fossils of prehistoric animals were often misjudged to be the bones of giants. And there were Hugh Troys in those days who were quite willing to turn mastodons into ancient giants. One such prankster appears to have been a physician named Dr. Mazurier who wrote a remarkable pamphlet in 1613, claiming that the tomb of a giant had been unearthed near the castle of Chaumont. The tomb contained a human skeleton over twenty-five feet long, with shoulders ten feet wide.

A controversy soon raged over this discovery and other pseudoscientific pamphleteers accused Dr. Mazurier of buying some big bones from some workmen and hoking up his giant. The bones still exist in the Musée de Paléontologie in Paris as a part of their mastodon collection.

The best-known hoax of this type took place in Sussex, England, in 1908, when an amateur archaeologist named Charles Dawson purportedly found fragments of bone near Piltdown. The fragments seemed to be part of a "dawn man" dating back hundreds of thousands of years. Paleontologists at the British Museum of Natural History became quite excited over this "Piltdown Man" and it became one of science's most important

artifacts. Dawson died in 1916, honored and distinguished as the discoverer of a vital link to man's distant past.

Thirty-six years passed before a new generation of scientists took a second look at the "Piltdown Man's" illustrious skull. They subjected it to carbon 14 radioactivity tests, and sprinkled it with the magical chemicals that had been developed since Dawson's time. Their conclusions rocked the scientific world. The jaw of the "dawn man" belonged to an ape who had joined his ancestors around 1900. Even worse, there was evidence that some highly skilled dentist had carefully and lovingly filed away at the teeth and remodeled part of the bone structure. The "Piltdown Man" was a cunning fake!

Had Charles Dawson pulled the leg of science? Or was he, himself, the victim of a prank? If so, who could have had the knowledge, skill, and motivations to execute such an elaborate hoax? The discovery of the manipulation created a whole new mystery and raised questions which will probably never be answered.

As soon as Europeans began to explore the distant reaches of South America, they encountered a breed of giant men. The southernmost parts of Argentina and Chile were labeled Patagonia by Magellan because the giants there wore leather moccasins and "pata" is Spanish for "hoof." In June, 1520, when Magellan's fleet anchored at Port San Julian on the Argentine coast, a giant appeared on the beach. Pigafetta, a member of Magellan's staff, later wrote: "This man was so tall that our heads scarcely came up to his waist, and his voice was like that of a bull."

Magellan's men managed to capture two of the giants, intending to take them back to Europe, but they died in chains en route.

Next, the British explorer Drake docked in Port San Julian in 1578 and had a skirmish with "men of large stature" who towered at seven feet six inches tall. He lost two of his men in the battle.

Other later explorers came into contact with this race of giants and contributed to the growing documentation. Anthony Knyvet passed through the Magellan Strait in 1592 and reported not only having seen the huge Patagonians but having measured several dead bodies at Port Desire, all ranging from ten and a half to twelve feet tall. In 1598 Sebald de Weert saw natives ten feet high in the same area. Other captains and crews reported similar experiences.

Then the giants began to disappear. By 1670, some scholars began to view all the Patagonian giant stories with distrust. Two French ships revived the controversy when they reported seeing groups of giants mixing with men of more ordinary stature on the shores of Possession Bay. The giants may have been thinning out or moving further inland to escape the encrouchment of the militant Europeans.

However, Commodore Byron, skipper of the Dolphin, is supposed to have had a peaceful meeting with the giant tribe in 1764. After anchoring in the Magellan Strait, the crew of the Dolphin saw hundreds of natives, some of whom were on horseback, and Commodore Byron timidly approached them.

"One of them, who afterwards appeared to be a chief, came towards me: he was of gigantic stature, and seemed to realize the tales of monsters in a human shape: he had the skin of some wild beast thrown over his shoulders . . . I did not measure him, but if I may judge of his height by the proportion of his stature to my own, it could not be much less than seven feet. When this frightful Colossus came up, we muttered somewhat to each other as a salutation, and I then walked with him towards his companions . . ."

One of Byron's officers wrote in the Annual Register, 1768, ". . . some of them are certainly nine feet, if they do not exceed it. The commodore, who is very near six feet, could just reach the top of

one of their heads, which he attempted, on tip-toe; and there were several taller than him on whom the experiment was tried . . . The women, I think, bear much the same proportion to the men as our Europeans do; there was hardly a man there less than eight feet, most of them considerably more; the women, I believe, run from seven and a half to eight."

In the nineteenth century the Patagonians began to shrink. Charles Darwin, originator of the theory of evolution, visited the area and was unimpressed, according to his book, The Voyage of the Beagle: "During our first visit (in January), we had an interview at Cape Gregory with the famous so-called gigantic Patagonians," he wrote, "who gave us a cordial reception. Their height appears greater than it really is, from their great guanaco mantles, their long flowing hair, and general figure: on an average their height is six feet, with some men taller and only a few shorter; and the women are also tall; altogether they are certainly the tallest race that we anywhere saw."

Again, we might speculate that the giants had been busy crossbreeding with more normal races over the centuries and gradually, generation after generation, they were reducing in size.

The British researcher and student of Unbelievables Rupert T. Gould offers the following in his book Enigmas:

> Believers in a living race of giants, if they are not satisfied with the Patagonians' average height of six feet or a little over (which is considerably above that of any other race) may, if they wish, still believe that the nine-foot men alleged to have been seen by Byron (or, for that matter, Knyvet's men of ten to twelve feet) were stray members of a tribe of colossi still surviving in the heart of Patagonia. It cannot definitely be said that such is an impossibility. There are enormous areas in Southern

> Patagonia which are still quite unexplored. It may be remembered that a considerable sensation was caused in 1897-98 by the discovery, in a cave at Consuelo Cove, Last Hope Inlet, on the western coast of Patagonia, of what was, apparently, some quite fresh skin of a Mylodon, or giant sloth—an animal hitherto supposed to have been extinct since prehistoric times.

Nothing much has been heard from the Patagonian giants in recent years.

Stories of giant humans abound in other parts of South America. The Incas told tales of giants descending from the sky and having sexual intercourse with Inca women. An early record by Bernal Diaz del Castillo tells how the Spanish conqueror Captain Cortez shipped the thigh bone of a giant back to the king of Spain.

"They said that their ancestors had told them that in times past there had lived among them men and women of giant size with huge bones," Castillo stated, "and because they were a very bad people of evil manners they fought with them and killed them and those which remained had died off. So that we could see how high and tall these people were, they brought us the leg bone of one which was very thick and the height of a man of ordinary stature and that was the bone from hip to knee. We were all amazed at seeing these bones and felt sure that there must have been giants in this country. Our Captain Cortez said to us that it might be well to send the bone to Castile so that his Majesty might see it, so we sent it with the first of our agents who went there."

Maybe the giants migrated to the impenetrable jungles of Brazil. On May 16, 1966, the London Daily Mirror reported:

> A ferocious band of savages more than seven feet tall are

terrorising neighbouring tribes in the Amazon jungle.

The existence of the savages was revealed by a group of Brazilian air cadets who went on a course of adventure-training in the jungle.

According to the cadets, the giants are known locally as the Krem-Akarore.

Peace-loving tribes of Indians on reservations in the Xingu region of the Matto Grasso live in terror of them.

The cadets said they tried to make contact with the giants —but failed.

Members of the friendly Calapalos tribe living on the reservation told the cadets that their tribe had captured a small Krem-Akarore boy who grew to be nearly seven and a half feet tall.

But he became so strong and rebellious as he grew up that he was condemned to death by the chief and executed.

Three Britons plan an expedition next year to the area in which the giants live, to study different types of Indians.

The Britons, members of an Anglo-Brazilian scientific reconnaissance group, are Alistair Mackenzie, Ian Bishop and David Hunt. They are already on their way to the Amazon basin.

As so often happens in these odd stories, the rest is silence.

In Italy archaeologists were baffled by the discovery of the bones of fifty tall men in the spring of 1969. Workmen excavating a factory site at Terracina, sixty miles south of Rome, uncovered fifty tiled coffins which bore neither inscriptions nor designs. Each coffin contained the bones of a man measuring from six to seven feet tall—very tall by Roman standards.

State archaeologist Dr. Luigi Cavallucci examined the remains

and said they were all apparently between the ages of thirty-five and forty. Their teeth, he noted, were in unusually good condition, with little indication of decay. The date this mass burial took place was not immediately determined.

The only theory was that the tall men had been picked members of a special Roman military force and had all died in battle. However, this idea was disputed because it was the practice to bury warriors in full armor, with all the trappings. There was nothing in the coffins except the bones. So the mystery remains. Where did fifty men from six to seven feet tall originate? How did they die, and why did they all share a common grave?

There were giants in the state of Minnesota. Their bodies have been unearthed. There were giants in California. More bodies have been found. There were giants in Arizona. There were giants. . . .

A giant skull was found in a cliff dwelling thirty miles south of Winslow, Arizona. It was so big that a size 7 1/8 Stetson was placed on it and "looked like one of those tiny hats merrymakers wear on New Year's," according to Jesse J. Benton in his book, Cow by the Tail. It had a gold tooth. Did Charles Dawson pay a visit to Arizona? Or shall we blame Hugh Troy?

Back to Charles Fort who found an interesting article in the American Journal of Science (3-26-139) about footprints imbedded in a block of sandstone near Carson, Nevada. They were eighteen to twenty inches long.

In Ohio a copper ax was found in a mound. It was twenty-two inches long and weighed thirty-eight pounds. A mighty big ax. But a bigger one was found in Wisconsin. It was carved out of stone; twenty-eight inches long, fourteen inches wide, and eleven inches thick. It weighed three hundred pounds. What kind of men could swing such axes? Perhaps Paul Bunyan wasn't a myth, after all.

The Delaware Indians believe that their tribe once lived in the Wild West but migrated eastward. In those days the land east of the

Mississippi was inhabited by a race of giants who built mighty cities and fortifications. They were called the Alligewi. Both the Allegheny River and Mountains were supposedly named after them. The migrating Indians asked for permission to pass through the Alligewi country. Permission was refused. The Indians went to war against the giants and eventually drove them out. The Alligewi fled westward, down the Ohio River and up the Mississippi into Minnesota.[1]

The Sioux Indians have another legend. When they lived in Minnesota, a race of giants appeared there and were exterminated by the Indians.[2]

So we have two widely separated legends from two different tribes. One claims they successfully drove the giants westward. The other claims they were on hand when the fleeing giants arrived. Those giants left their bones in Minnesota to lend credence to the story. Volume I of the Minnesota Geological Survey, and Aborigines of Minnesota give the details of many finds of monstrous human skeletons.

Mound diggers at La Crescent found a large copper skillet and "bones of men of huge stature." Mounds seven miles southwest of Chatfield, Minnesota, yielded six skeletons of "men of enormous size." The St. Paul Pioneer Press (June 29, 1888) reported that the remains of seven persons "seven or eight feet tall" were found in a mound. The skulls had receding foreheads and "teeth were double all the way around, not like those of the present race of men."

According to the St. Paul Globe (August 12, 1896), the skeleton of a huge man was dug up on the Beckley farm at Lake Koronis. At Moose Island Lake the remains of seven-foot-tall men were discovered. Near Pine City several more outlandish skeletons were dug up. And at the lone mound outside Warren, Minnesota, ten more bodies of gigantic size, both men and women, were

produced in 1882.

A slender link was found in the Grand Mound of Itasca County, Minnesota, when sea shells from either California or the Gulf of Mexico were discovered amongst large skulls and bones. How did California sea shells end up in a mound in the wilds of Minnesota? Obviously somebody must have carried them there. And that somebody was, from the evidence, a giant. The McKinstry Mounds are not far from the Grand Mound and it was there that one hundred more skeletons were found, some of them representing men over ten feet tall.

Back in 1833 a group of soldiers at Lompock Rancho, California, dug up the remains of a man twelve feet tall. He was surrounded by giant weapons, and carved sea shells. The skull disclosed a double row of teeth.

Excavating workmen came upon another oddity in 1891, near Crittenden, Arizona, when their shovels suddenly struck a huge stone coffin which apparently once held the body of a man twelve feet tall. A carving on the granite case indicated that he had had six toes.

Six toes? Not far from the tiny hamlet of Braytown, Tennessee, there is a rock clearly impressed with more giant footprints. They seem to have been made by someone whose heel was thirteen inches across. Someone with six toes!

Prospectors near Eureka, Nevada, discovered the bones of a giant foot and foreleg in July 1877. The leg measured thirty-nine inches from knee to ankle, according to the local newspapers.

What has happened to all these bones and relics? Some are packed away in the basements of local museums. Most have moved, generation after generation, from living rooms to barns to garbage dumps. Since science does not believe in giants, scientists are naturally not very interested in giant human bones. No one can estimate how many hundreds or thousands of these finds have

been made over the years. The written records are sparse, and thousands of old newspapers and files must be sifted before we can fully assemble the complete story of the giants.

In 1896-97 scores of mysterious airships appeared suddenly in the skies all over the United States. The newspapers for the period were filled with incredible stories of the objects and their peculiar occupants. One of the most amazing of these tales appeared in the Saginaw, Michigan Courier-Herald (April 16, 1897). It seems that at 4:30 A.M. on Wednesday morning, April 14, a strange flying contraption landed in a field near Howard City, Michigan, and a naked giant stepped from it.

"He is about nine and a half feet tall," the report stated, "and his talk, while musical, is not talk at all, but seems to be a repetition of bellowing. One of the farmers who was somewhat braver, attempted to go near him, and got a kick that will last him for some time, having got his hip broken. Great excitement prevails here, and lots of people are flocking here from Morley and Howard City to view the strange being at a distance, as no one dares to go near. He seems to be trying to talk to people."

There were no follow-up stories on this alleged incident.

Have our giants taken to the air?

Was a gentleman from Patagonia swooped up by a flying machine and deposited in Michigan in 1897? The report mentioned that piles of furry animal pelts were seen on board the object, and Michigan in April might have been unpleasantly warm to a Patagonian used to the climate of the Antarctic Circle.

SEVEN

The Hairy Ones

ANOTHER KIND of giant has seemingly always existed with us on this planet. He is shaped like a human being but is covered with hair and prefers to live in the quiet, thinly populated forests of Canada. However, he is something of a vagabond and has frequently been seen all over the United States. Like most of our other monsters, he has the uncanny ability to disappear into thin air as soon as the posses begin to close in. The natives of the far-off Himalayas are also very familiar with this creature and long ago named it the Metoh-Kangmi which means "the evil-smelling man of the snows." The British explorers took liberties with this phrase and dubbed the animal the Abominable Snowman. ABSM for short.

There is now considerable evidence that the ABSM actually exists. What is more, there seem to be several different types running rampant. They come in all sizes, ranging from stout three-footers to giant hair-covered beasties ten feet tall. Some of them seem to be directly related to unidentified flying objects. Others could be actual descendants of the prehistoric Neanderthal man.

Like Huge Troy's rhinoceros, they are fond of scattering their giant footprints around the countryside, leaving behind very little evidence of any other kind. In the redwood forests of California they have earned the nickname "Big Foot."

The first published reference to the Himalayan ABSM appeared in 1899, in a book titled Among the Himalayas by Major L. A. Waddell. He stated matter-of-factly that he had come across some giant man-like tracks in the tiny kingdom of Sikkim in 1887. Successive expeditions to those mountains reported regularly encountering similar tracks and, in several instances, large hair-covered personages. Generations of Type B scientists, huddled comfortably amid their books on Ivy League campuses, scoffed at the reports and presented a wide range of speculations. It was only a bear or an ape, they announced periodically, and one group of scholars concluded that the tracks were spread by naked Yogis wandering about the mountains in the sub-zero temperatures.

Three years before Major Waddell found those footprints in Sikkim, an actual ABSM-type creature was reportedly captured in Canada. According to the Daily British Colonist (July 3, 1884), a group of railroad workmen digging a tunnel outside of Yale, British Columbia, came upon what appeared at first to be a man sleeping on the tracks. It proved to be a hairy "half man, half beast" which was captured alive after a five-minute chase. "Jacko," as he was named by his captors, was four feet seven inches tall and weighed 127 pounds.

"He has long, black, strong hair and resembles a human being with one exception: his entire body, excepting his hands (or paws) and feet are covered with glossy hair one inch long," the account stated. "His fore arm is much longer than a man's fore arm . . ."

What happened to "Jacko" is not known. As recently as 1946, a Canadian reporter interviewed an elderly gentleman in Lytton, British Columbia, who claimed he had seen it. Others, including

Mr. Alexander Caulfield Anderson of the Hudson's Bay Company, claimed to have encountered these animals as early as 1864.

The definitive work Abominable Snowmen: Legend Come To Life by Ivan T. Sanderson delves into these early reports in detail and notes the many Indian legends and myths revolving around these creatures in North America. There are several old Indian tales about women being abducted by the ABSM and even having children by them. We might also mention that many other cultures have produced identical stories. Scholars may one day discover that man has frequently crossbred with these hairy beings throughout history. The Bible makes particular mention of this. In Genesis (25: 19-34) Esau was described as being born "red, all over like a hairy garment."

Early European literature contains numerous references to the "Wild Men of the Woods" who were supposed to have existed hidden away in the dense forests of England, France, Germany, and many other countries. They were described as tall, hair-covered men of remarkable agility, able to leap vast distances and out-run ordinary men. In Irish folklore, according to The Bestiary, these Homines Sylvestris "used to inhabit inelegant subterranean hovels, lived on vegetables, and refused to have anything to do with other humans . . . However kindly they were treated, it was impossible to civilize them, because they refused to recognize law and order . . . There were an almost infinite number of them in Ireland."

In the early literature the European "Wild Men" purportedly had a lustful nature and would accost lone human females passing through the forests, forcibly engaging them in sexual intercourse. Perhaps these tales are the basis for the Satyr legends, and artists and Playboy cartoonists have misrepresented the Satyrs by giving them cloven hooves. Since the American Indians have similar stories it is possible that there is some fact to the tales.

Isolated tribes in South America also have legends of racial intermixing with the hairy ones. Some nonscientific speculators have even suggested that the creatures can only reproduce through human females. However, we have yet to uncover a claim that anyone was raped by a hairy monster, although if such claims were ever made it is unlikely that they would get into print.

Even more incredible is the steadily accumulating evidence which strongly suggests that the hairy ABSMs are connected in some peculiar way with the phenomenon of unidentified flying objects. We will examine this material in another chapter. The funny flying saucers have produced all kinds of intriguing monster reports, and we were not being entirely facetious when we proposed in Chapter Six that a Patagonian giant might have been transplanted in Michigan in 1897. It almost seems as if anomalous earthly creatures have somehow been enlisted (or drafted) into service by the saucers to carry out some mysterious missions. The UFO evidence, which is now almost overwhelming, indicates that the entire flying saucer phenomenon is an outrageous enterprise that preys upon our gullibility and is meant to inspire a totally false belief in extraterrestrial (interplanetary) visitants.

One of America's leading UFOlogists is Brad Steiger, author of many books on the subject. Mr. Steiger has received an astonishing journal from James C. Wyatt of Memphis, Tennessee. The journal was purportedly written by Mr. Wyatt's grandfather and discusses in detail an experience with a "Crazy Bear" in the year 1888. An Indian is supposed to have led Grandfather Wyatt to a hidden cave in Tennessee where a hairy man-like creature was concealed. The Indians fed the "Crazy Bear" at regular intervals, asserting that such creatures were ejected from "moons" which landed periodically in the valley.

The Indians told him that over the years there had been many "Crazy Bears" left in the woods, and many of their people had seen

the "skymen" put their "Crazy Bears" out of their "moons."

So there is one solution to our mystery. The flying saucers are dumping hairy monsters all over the landscape! Wyatt's "Crazy Bear" is described as a short-necked, long-armed creature covered with glossy black hair.

It is a curious fact that flying saucers have been repeatedly seen in ABSM-infested territories. A mountain-climbing expedition to Everest in 1923–24, headed by General Bruce, not only came across the classic giant footprints of the ABSM, but also reportedly saw "a great, hairy, naked man running across a snowfield below" at around seventeen thousand feet. Subsequent expeditions had further encounters with the creature. During the 1933 Everest attempt, mountaineer F. S. Smythe was climbing alone when he observed "two curious-looking objects floating in the sky." They hovered motionless and seemed to pulsate slowly. Other Himalayan expeditions in the 1920s and '30s reported variously seeing "giant silver disks" and "a flying teakettle." The UFO controversy did not exist in those days so most Type B scientists regarded these stories as hallucinations created by the high altitude. Although the natives had plenty to say about the ABSM, or Yeti, they shrugged off the aerial objects as religious manifestations. The disks had always flown regular routes over the mountains. They belonged there, like the clouds, the natives explained to early explorers.

We visited India and the Himalayas in 1955–56 and heard many Yeti stories from the natives. These mysterious animals are an accepted fact in the lives of the mountain people in the same way that deer are an accepted fact to us. At the time of our visit only about four hundred white men had visited those regions in all of history. Most of these had been religious missionaries more intent on saving souls than chasing monsters. In many remote villages we were the very first white men ever to be seen by the natives. Since

then the tiny mountain kingdoms of Nepal, Bhutan, and Sikkim have been opened up to limited tourism. But the Red Chinese have occupied Tibet completely, driven out the Dalai Lama and his followers, and sealed off the mountain passes with troops and fortifications. It is virtually impossible to obtain an accurate map of the Himalayan territories. The area is strategically important to India, and it would be easier to get a map of the atomic installation at Oak Ridge, Tennessee.

In some places the Yeti is greatly feared and there are numerous accounts of the animals attacking and killing human beings. In 1949 a Sherpa herdsman named Lakhpa Tensing was reportedly torn apart by a Yeti in the bleak pass of Nanga Parbat, one of the highest passes in the world, far beyond the reach of ordinary animals.

Mountain mothers deal with their misbehaving children by warning that the Yeti will get them if they don't watch out. Hill farmers in some areas are afraid to work after dark because of this curtain of superstition and fear. They believe that to look at a Yeti means death, and the only protection is to cover your eyes and run downhill. The Yeti's feet are supposed to be mounted backwards to facilitate mountain climbing, but that makes things damned awkward when it tries to run downhill.

This odd belief springs from an incident that allegedly happened back in the early 1900s when the English were stretching a telegraph line from Kalimpong, India, to Lhasa, Tibet. It was a big job and many hillmen were hired to work on it. Some of them were encamped at Chumbithang, three miles from the Jelep-la pass, one of the gateways to Tibet. One morning a dozen workers went out and failed to return. The next morning a squad of British soldiers went out to search for them.

They found, instead, a strange animal hiding under some giant boulders in the approaches to the pass. They shot it and dragged it

to the nearest dak bungalow (huts maintained for travelers). Later Sir Charles Bell, then the British political officer of Sikkim, came and ordered the carcass packed and shipped away, supposedly to England. It was never seen again and there is no trace of it.

This story has been lovingly repeated in several Indian books on mountain lore but it seems to be based more on hearsay than fact. There is no mention of it in Sir Charles' papers. However, an old man in Darjeeling, Bombahadur Chetri, claims he saw it with his own eyes when he was a boy. He describes it as being ten feet tall and covered with shaggy hairs two or three inches long. Its gruesome face was hairless, set with a mouthful of sharp yellow fangs and cold red eyes. Its feet were backwards, he said. But this could be a false impression depending on how the carcass was lying. Its feet could have been handlike, like an ape's, hanging down over the edge of the table.

It is significant that the Snowman legend persists throughout the Himalayan range from Kashmir in the east, to Assam far to the west. Every tribe has stories about the creature, and every mountain language (there are many) has a word for it. All of these stories contain essentially the same details, and the basic descriptions are universally agreed upon. There are two main types. One is about four feet tall and resembles a human dwarf covered with hair. The other is very tall, frequently reported to be from to seven to ten feet. Neither resembles a bear or ape. Bears move about on all fours most of the time, except when attacking. As for gorillas, anthropologists estimate that the total world gorilla population is around four hundred, and they are found only in a small area deep within Equatorial Africa.

Animals answering to the descriptions of the two Himalayan Yeti types have reportedly been seen near grounded flying saucers in South America, and even in France. They will be discussed in another chapter.

Tenzing Norgay, the Sherpa who, together with Sir Edmund Hillary, was the first to reach the summit of Mount Everest on May 29, 1953, lives in the picturesque mountain village of Darjeeling, India, in the Himalayan foothills. We were able to spend a considerable amount of time with this remarkably simple and humble man during our visit to the region. Tenzing likes to tell about his brother-in-law who was once an assistant to the great Sangay Rimboche, the late Grand Lama of the Rongbuck monastery on the steep approach to Everest. He went with the Grand Lama on his annual treks to meditate in the high, secret, holy places on the mountain. During one of these trips another assistant lama found a dead Yeti and presented the skin to Sangay Rimboche. It looked like the skin of a young bear, and the Grand Lama used it for years to sit on while meditating. It was probably placed in his Chorten after his death.

Many of the mountain lamaseries cherish bits of Yeti hair and bones as sacred relices. They think Yetis are devils posted around the mountains to guard the gods who supposedly live on the summits. In the fall of 1954, a tribe of headhunters in Assam reportedly killed and ate a creature ten feet tall. The bones and fur are supposed to have been carried off to a monastery.

Tenzing has never seen a Yeti personally but he does not question its existence. His father claims to have once met one face to face and managed to escape. Tenzing said his father wasn't a liar or given to making up wild tales. And his description correlates with the reports of other eyewitnesses.

Almost every expedition into the more remote sectors of the Himalayas in the past fifty years has seen and photographed the huge ABSM footprints. Usually such prints are found in the snow at high altitudes which are beyond the reach of most ordinary animals. After all, animals are not likely to venture into areas where no food or prey can exist. Samples of Yeti droppings have

also been collected and studied and indicate that it lives on a small rodent known as the mouse-hare. A number of expeditions have produced reliable reports of having seen the beast itself from a distance. It has been seen digging up roots with a stick, something no ordinary animal would do. This use of a tool puts it in a subhuman class.

What could it be? There is some evidence that it might actually be a survivor of the early Neanderthal man. Footprints known to have been made by Neanderthalers have been discovered and they are almost identical to the ABSM tracks. In 1948 an ancient cave, long sealed by volcanic lava, was opened near Toirano, Italy, and it was found to contain all kinds of interesting artifacts, including the footprints of modern-type men, giant bears, and Neanderthalers. The latter tracks were immediately recognized as being almost exactly the same as the footprints photographed by the various expeditions to Everest. Of equal interest was the fact that the discovery seemed to indicate that modern man and the Neanderthalers existed in the same era. A fact which led the Type B scientists to quickly shuffle the discovery into the back of their files.

In the 1950s an expedition in the Middle East unearthed relics which suggested that modern man, Cro-Magnon man, and Neanderthal man had all existed at the same time. This, too, was quickly swept under the carpet by the pro-evolution types. After all, if these various human and subhuman personages all lived together in a single epoch then there is something radically wrong with our long-accepted evolutionary scale.

The evidence we are summarising here opens a whole new anthropological bag. Could the "Wild Men of the Woods" of Europe have been stray survivors of some ancient time, gradually driven further and further back into the forests and mountains, forced to mate with human females in order to survive at all, and,

finally, pressed into extinction when human females were no longer readily accessible? Could these hairy beings have survived in the remote fastness of the Himalayas and the deep jungles of Brazil and northern Canada?

We have seen the Yeti footprints for ourselves. We have even tried to track the animal down to his lair. In Jadoo, this adventure was fully described. Here is a summary of that narrative: [1]

While traveling through northern Sikkim with a native guide named Norbhu, we heard the Yeti's distinctive call which "sounded like a bird very near, short chirps with a slight warble. Similar to monkey chatter but higher pitched and less defined."

We were very close to the border of Tibet, and soon found definite Yeti tracks. "The tracks were clear and spaced at a leisurely pace. It was definitely not an ape or bear, and the prints were much too big to have been made by a barefooted man . . . Then suddenly, from somewhere in front of us, there was a sharp animal scream; brief, filled with tearing pain. Norbhu jumped a foot. Then there was only silence and the drip of water on the leaves overhead.

"A little further on a group of natives appeared and led us to their village on the brink of a narrow river. They'd heard the scream, too. It was a panther, they said. A dying panther. . . . They had found a bloody spot surrounded by Yeti tracks. They were rushing back to their village when they bumped into us.

"Could a Yeti kill a panther, I asked?

"It was one of the few things that could.

"Norbhu turned back to Dubdi, and I proceeded alone. The trail was easy to follow; too easy. The Yeti was more agile and faster than a plodding white man. True to what the lamas had told me repeatedly, the Yeti was picking the easiest route to wherever it was going, avoiding more difficult jungle areas, picking the shallowest

spots in rivers, etc. Sometimes it seemed as if I were right on top of him. Other times I seemed to have no chance of finding it.

"I found villages and lamaseries in a state of alert and fear after having heard or seen my prey. All the descriptions ran the same. It was three feet taller than myself (I'm six feet two inches), covered with brown hair, with a hairless red face and a head that sloped up to a slight point.

"At a monastery above Changthang, the lamas were beating drums and blowing trumpets when I arrived. They'd seen the Yeti only a few hours before, running along the trail I was following . . .

"Following the hot and cold Yeti trail, I arrived at last in the northern village of Lachen, 8,800 feet above sea level, where the natives grabbed me excitedly and led me through the tortuous passes to a marsh. A Yeti . . . my Yeti, no doubt . . . had been seen there by a group of children that very morning. The place was crawling with tracks. As I stood there looking down at them an eerie screech drifted down from the jutting rocks nearby. The effect on the natives was electric. They were stunned and frightened; only my presence kept them from running. They watched me with alarmed curiosity, wondering what I was going to do.

"I was wondering, too.

"Cautiously I moved forward, staggering up an inclined path strewn with giant boulders. Finally, I emerged onto the edge of a sweeping cavity filled with water, where broken trees and decayed bushes poked up like skeletons.

"That was where I saw it!

"Maybe it wasn't a Yeti, I wasn't close enough to be absolutely sure. But something was out there, across the lake. Something big, breathtakingly big, and brown, and moving swiftly, splashing through the shallow, icy waters toward a pile of boulders. As it

neared them, another brown blur moved out to meet it and together they disappeared beyond the debris of a landfall.

"I circled the lake and headed cautiously up through the rocks and landfalls. In a few minutes I came to a narrow channel in the cliffs . . .

"Suddenly the high-pitched Yeti call sounded again and I froze. It was coming from the cliffs overhead. The Yetis were up there somewhere, watching me, jeering me!

"I hugged the side of the channel and looked up. High above me there was a quick movement. A flash of brown against the gray sky . . . The Yetis must have climbed straight up the sheer face of the cliffs; something no bear or ape could do easily . . . I knew I couldn't climb those cliffs. I knew I couldn't get near those clever, evasive animals alone. I stood there tensely for a long time . . . then I slowly backed out of that channel.

"That was as close as I ever got to the Abominable Snowmen."

The most recent appearance of Abominable footprints was in March 1969. Mr. Charles Loucks, a mountaineer from Centerpoint, New York, was trekking through Nepal when he came across a set of tracks in the snow at twelve thousand feet. They were four inches wide, seven inches long, and seemed to have a middle toe slightly longer than the other four. The tracks extended for about one hundred feet, leading into the underbrush and ignoring a nearby open path.

EIGHT

Meanwhile in the Soviet Union

PITY THE poor Yeti. He doesn't exist but he doesn't have enough brains to realize it. The mystery of the giant footprints has been solved many times by many Type B scientists. Back in 1958 a wire story quoted an anthropologist from Johns Hopkins University, explaining that the Yeti footprints were made by natives wearing sandals with their big toes sticking out. The natives of the Himalayas apparently never read the story, and so they continue to wear heavy boots when they are wading around in the mountain snows.

Somebody is always shooting at these hairy illusions, and there are a number of documented accounts of the creatures having been shot dead, or captured and dying slowly in captivity. The real myth seems to be the scientific allegation that the Abominable Snowman does not exist, has never existed, and cannot possibly exist.

China has produced a considerable amount of ABSM lore and a good part of it correlates favorably with the material from the Himalayas and even from Canada.

One story relates how a group of Chinese hunters came upon an

ABSM in 1913, shot, and wounded it, carrying it triumphantly to Patang in Sinkiang Province where it survived for some months. The late Frank Edwards describes it in Stranger Than Science as "a creature with a black monkey-like face, covered with silvery yellow hair several inches long. It had exceptionally powerful hands and had feet much like those of a human, rather than an ape. It grunted and made guttural sounds but spent most of its time pursing its lips and making loud whistling noises."

In 1954 a Chinese official in the Yunnan Province told some visiting Russians that a hair-covered race of sub-humans thrived in the mountains of Western Yunnan. One of them had even been captured a few years earlier and brought to Kunming. The Chinese call them Gin-Sung or Bear-Men. In other regions the Chinese speak of giant hairy animals known locally as Kra-Dhan and Bec-Boc. It is well-known to the tribes of the Gobi Desert and the people of Mongolia, and ancient Chinese literature frequently alludes to these "hairy mountain men." It would take a book twice the length of this one just to list the many available literary references extant. Explorers and expeditions to those far corners have returned with a wealth of information about these fascinating animals and numerous accounts and descriptions have been published in random scientific journals over the years.

With the exception of the European stories and some of those reports from Canada, it seems that the majority of these creatures are accompanied by a pungent, very unpleasant odor. This stink seems to exceed normal animal smells and could, eventually, offer some kind of clue to the body chemistry of the creatures. For now we can only conclude that the Abominable Snowman is using the wrong kind of soap.

North of Tibet and west of China, the Soviet Union has several isolated "pockets" where ABSM-types seem to abound. Russian scientists have long had a special interest in the Yeti and have

periodically sent out expeditions to try to learn more about them. A number of well-documented reports have come from Russia and have been collected and translated by Ivan T. Sanderson. A good part of the Yeti literature in the United States is based entirely upon Mr. Sanderson's research and writings, usually without mentioning his name at all. We are therefore going to give Mr. Sanderson full credit before we proceed to steal some choice items from his work.

In Abominable Snowmen: Legend Come To Life Sanderson deals at length with the geographical distribution of the ABSM stories and points out how unlikely it is for separate, isolated cultures to come up with identical details, unless there was some definite truth underlying those details. Tribes speaking entirely different languages, and remaining almost completely isolated from other tribes of their own race, have managed to produce identical ABSM "data." Even in the United States, where general communications are superb in comparison to the remote fastness of Tibet and China, the many annual encounters with ABSM-types rarely receive any publicity beyond the areas where they occurred. Monster stories, like flying saucer tales, are "human interest" items and rarely receive much notice in the national press. This dearth of published reports is in our favor since few witnesses have even heard of these things before their own encounter. While most Americans have now read random superficial items about both Yetis and UFOs, they have not been exposed to the information necessary for the construction of a convincing false report. The Soviet Union could conceivably capture a whole tribe of Yetis and we might never know it until they put them on display at the next World's Fair. Material published in the Russian language rarely filters down to American monster buffs.

Whole states in the United States have been thrown into an uproar over "monster mania" in recent years, with armies of armed men, police dogs, and helicopters searching hundreds of square

miles in vain efforts to locate the unbelievable creatures which were reportedly slaughtering domestic animals and terrifying farmers. But what causes headlines in the newspapers in one state is often ignored altogether in the press of adjoining states. News of these monster panics rarely appear in the New York Times or Time and Newsweek. We live in a world so filled with "hard" news of war and disaster that these more unusual events are reduced to the status of "fillers" and "human interest items." Collectors of esoterica tend to regard all this as some form of sinister censorship, and circulate wild stories about how the government suppresses the news of such events.

In countries such as the Soviet Union, where the press really is controlled and censored by the government, there are certain to be even fewer published reports.

"There lives in Moscow today a scientist by the name of V. A. Khakhlov," Sanderson writes, "who in 1913 submitted a full and detailed report on the east Asiatic ABSMs to the Russian Imperial Academy of Sciences. This priceless material was shelved, he was denied funds to continue his field investigations, and he was frankly told to shut up."

In more recent years some maverick Russian scientists have begun to take a more open interest in the ABSM mystery, and a few papers on the subject have been circulated in limited numbers. A geologist named B. M. Zdorick claims that he stumbled upon a sleeping creature in 1934 while trekking along the Darwaz Ridge in the Pamirs.

"He was about a meter and a half in length [approximately four feet ten inches]," Zdorick reported. "The head and the forward limbs could not be seen because they were hidden by a growth of wild oats. The legs, however, could be seen. They had black naked soles, and were too long and graceful to have belonged to a bear; his back was also too flat to be a bear's. The whole body of this

animal was covered with fur, more like the fur of a yak, than the rich fur of a bear. The color of the fur was a grayish brown, somewhat more prominent brown than a bear's."

His guide was badly frightened by this sight and the two men did not stay to study the creature more closely. Legends of these creatures abound throughout the Pamir mountain range. A man in Chesh Teb is supposed to have wrestled with one of them in 1939. He was out hunting around 4:00 P.M. when the animal sprang at him.

"Now this hunter wrestled with Gul-Biavan," the story goes. "The Gul-Biavan was covered with short, soft wool and the man could not get hold of anything. On the face of this man there was also short wool and there was a terrible odor coming from him. Finally, the hunter was able to throw the Gul-Biavan to the ground, but at the same time he lost consciousness himself. The villagers came upon the man and brought him home . . . the ground around him bore evidence of this wrestling match."

While camping near the head of the Jurmut River in the Soviet Union, Professor V. K. Leontiev reportedly obtained a brief glimpse of a Yeti type. It was in August 1957 and the Professor's adventure began when he heard an unusual cry. "It wasn't like the yell of an animal—not any wild mammal or bird known to me could make such a sound, and yet it couldn't be a human being either," the Professor wrote. Shortly afterwards he saw something moving across a field of snow about 150 feet away. "He was walking on his feet, not touching the ground with his hands," Leontiev continued. "His shoulders were unusually wide. His body was covered with long dark hair. He was about 2.2 meters [about 7 feet] tall."

The Professor said he picked up his rifle and fired at the being. At the sound of the shot, the creature took off at "incredible speed" and disappeared into some high rocks beyond the snowfield. Large

footprints were left behind.

The Russian Information Service supplied Mr. Sanderson with a translation of the following testimony from Lt. Colonel V. S. Karapetyan of the Medical Service of the Soviet Army:

> From October to December of 1941 our infantry battalion was stationed some thirty kilometers from the town of Buinaksk (in the Dagestan A.S.S.R.) One day the representatives of the local authorities asked me to examine a man caught in the surrounding mountains and brought to the district center. My medical advice was needed to establish whether or not this curious creature was a disguised spy.
>
> I entered a shed with two members of the local authorities. When I asked why I had to examine the man in a cold shed and not in a warm room, I was told that the prisoner could not be kept in a warm room. He had sweated in the house so profusely that they had to keep him in the shed.
>
> I can still see the creature as it stood before me, a male, naked and bare-footed. And it was doubtlessly a man, because its entire shape was human. The chest, back and shoulders, however, were covered with shaggy hair of a dark brown color. This fur of his was much like that of a bear, and two to three centimeters long. The fur was thinner and softer below the chest. His wrists were crude and sparsely covered with hair. The palms of his hands and the soles of his feet were free of hair. But the hair on his head reached to his shoulders, partly covering his forehead. The hair on his head, moreover, felt very rough to the hand. He had no beard or mustache, though his face was completely covered with a light growth of

hair. The hair around his mouth was also short and sparse.

The man stood absolutely straight with his arms hanging and his height was above the average—about 180 centimeters [about 70 inches]. He stood before me like a giant, his mighty chest thrust forward. His fingers were thick, strong, and exceptionally large. On the whole, he was considerably bigger than any of the local inhabitants.

His eyes told me nothing. They were dull and empty—the eyes of an animal. And he seemed to me like an animal and nothing more.

As I learned, he had accepted no food or drink since he was caught. He had asked for nothing and said nothing. When kept in a warm room he sweated profusely. While I was there, some water and then some bread were brought up to his mouth; and someone offered him a hand, but there was no reaction. I gave the verbal conclusion that this was no disguised person, but a wild man of some kind. Then I returned to my unit and never heard of him again.

Since Colonel Karapetyan makes no mention of the man's odor, despite his sweating, we assume he was not a member of the smelly variety. There are many other Soviet accounts of captured Yeti types, some at great variance with the others. Professor Khakhlov's 1913 report contains several of these cases. He describes, for example, how a group of herdsmen captured one of the creatures in the mountains of Iran-Kabirg. This one was one of the "shorties." Khakhlov wrote:

The "wild man" was a male, below average height,

covered with hair "like a young camel". He had long arms, far below his knees, stooped, with shoulders hunched forward; his chest was flat and narrow; the forehead sloping over the eyes with prominently arched brows. Lower jaw was massive without any chin; nose was small with large nostrils. The ears were large without any lobes, pointed back. On the back of his neck there was a rise. The skin on the forehead, elbows and knees hard and tough. When he was captured he was standing with his legs spread, slightly bent in the knees; when he was running he was spreading his feet wide apart awkwardly swinging his arms. The instep of the "wild man" resembled a human, but at least twice the size with widely separated toes; the large toe being shorter than that of humans, and widely separated from the others. The arm with long fingers was like a human arm, and yet different.

When the "wild man" at the insistence of the herders was allowed to go free, two men followed him and discovered the place where he vanished; an indentation under a hanging rock strewn with high grass. The local residents offered additional information about these creatures: that they lived in pairs, seldom seen by people, and not at all dangerous to humans.

A second witness stated that for several months he observed a "wild man" in the regions of the River Manass, or Dam. This creature of the female sex was sometimes chained to a small mill but was also allowed to go free. The general description was the same as of the male: hairy cover of skin, stooped, narrow chest, shoulders were inclined forward, long arms; bent knees, flat insteps, spread out toes resembling a paw, the contact

with the ground flat without the instep. The head is described in the same fashion—absence of a chin and a rise in the back.

This creature seldom issued any sounds and usually was quiet and silent. Only when approached she bared her teeth and screeched. She had a peculiar way of lying down, or sleeping—like a camel, by squatting on the ground on its knees and elbows, resting the forehead on the ground, and resting the wrists on the back of the head. This position accounts for the unusually hard skin of the elbows and knees—like camel's soles. When offered food, the female ate only raw meat, some vegetables and grain. She did not touch cooked meat or bread, although later she was getting used to bread. Sometimes she would catch and eat some insects. She would drink in animal fashion, by lapping water, or sometimes she would dip her arm in water and lick the water. When she was allowed to go free, she ran awkwardly swinging her arms, to the nearby reeds where she disappeared.

Some of the details in these accounts will turn up again in this book in other monster reports viewed in an entirely different context. The long fingers are common in many of the descriptions of flying saucer "pilots" which we will examine further on. Some of the hairy creatures running around the United States seem to conform to these general descriptions from the Soviet Union.

Ivan Sanderson's book Abominable Snowmen: Legend Come to Life is over five hundred pages long and carefully presents all sides of the question. Obviously we can not even begin to reduce such a complicated subject to a few pages here. Sanderson has attempted to catalog all of the known ABSM lore from many

scattered geographical locations. After many years of investigation and study he concludes, "I think there are at least three main types of ultra-primitive men, and/or sub-men, and/or sub-hominids, still alive today. These I would say are, first, sundry pigmy types of very near-human or completely human composition; second, some remaining Neanderthaler types in eastern Eurasia; and third, some very primitive and large creatures almost absolutely without any 'culture' in any sense of that term, in northwestern North and Central America, perhaps in South America, the eastern Sino-Tibetan uplands, and in Indo-China. Then, I am even more sure that there still remains something else."

We agree. There still remains something else.

NINE

Big Feet and Little Brains

VANCOUVER ISLAND, British Columbia, lies just across the Canadian border, north of Seattle, Washington. Unidentified hairy beings live there. The Indians have always insisted that the heavily forested sections of the island were inhabited by "Wild Men of the Woods." A lumberman named Mike King reported stumbling across one of the creatures there in 1901. He said that he saw it squatting by a creek, carefully washing off some roots and stacking them in two neat piles. He started to raise his rifle but felt that he was looking at something human—too human to be shot at, even though it was large and covered with reddish brown fur. It finally jumped up and ran off like a man.

"His arms were peculiarly long and used freely in climbing and bush-running," Mr. King observed. After the thing had departed, King went down to the creek and looked at its tracks. He saw evidence of a "human foot but with phenomenally long and spreading toes."

British Columbia has produced many ABSM reports (up in Canada the thing is called by the old Indian name, "Sasquatch").

Even Theodore Roosevelt, the great outdoorsman who later became President, recorded a hairy monster story in a book he published in 1893, Wilderness Hunter. Roosevelt repeated a tale told to him by a trapper named Bauman. Essentially, Bauman and another man had been camping at the head of Wisdom River when something tall, walking on two legs, had invaded their camp and smashed their gear. At night they could hear "a harsh, grating, long-drawn moan, a peculiarly sinister sound." Bauman left the camp one day and when he returned he found his friend dead.

"The body was still warm," Roosevelt wrote, "but the neck was broken, while there were four great fang marks in the throat. The footprints of the unknown beast-creature, printed deep in the soft soil, told the whole story . . . It had not eaten the body, but apparently had romped and gambolled round it in uncouth, ferocious glee, occasionally rolling over and over it; and had then fled back into the soundless depths of the woods."

Fortunately there aren't too many stories of witnesses suffering physical harm from their meetings with the hairy people. But there are too many to ignore. In the next chapter we will summarize a large number of North American sightings, including incidents involving attacks and injuries.

In 1965 John W. Green, editor of the Agassiz, British Columbia Advance, compiled a list of 120 Sasquatch incidents ranging from sightings and attacks to the discovery of tracks and various strange occurrences. In 1942, according to Green, a man in Katz, British Columbia, had his arm broken by a hairy giant while picking berries. Going further back, there was a story that two mountain hunters in British Columbia had been killed by something that "walked on two legs" in the early 1800s. Back in 1907 Indians at Bishop's Cove, British Columbia, were reportedly terrified by a monkey-like wild man that dug clams at night and "howled." In 1945 a hairy giant chased one Henry Charlie for nearly a mile near

Harrison Mills, British Columbia.

Another member of our monster hunting brigade, Lee Trippett, an electronics engineer in Eugene, Oregon, has collected forty-one ABSM incidents from the states of Washington, Oregon, and California, alone. In California the creature has been dubbed "Big Foot" for obvious reasons.

So right there we have 161 events. Obviously we cannot list them all. A columnist for the San Francisco Chronicle, George Draper, has written many articles about "Big Foot," and he, too, has come up with more items for our grotesque glossary. Still another researcher, Roger Patterson of Yakima, Washington, has built up an enormous file of little-known sightings and has acquired a collection of plaster casts of "Big Foot" footprints and other kinds of tangible evidence, including photographs. An anthropologist in Illinois, Loren Coleman, has yet another collection of reports.

This mass of evidence contains all kinds of oddities, such as the following letter written in Katz, British Columbia, on April 23, 1957, by someone who signed the name "Mary Joe." The letter was mailed to the village clerk at Harrison Hot Springs in the heart of Sasquatch country. It was written in a crude, almost illiterate style, apparently the work of an Indian lady. She says, in part:

> Fifteen years ago my old daddy was hurt bad by Sasquatch man he met a mile from Katz . . . One thing my daddy was good Catholic and he very little drink likker . . . What happens he say was daddy was with momma picking berries when he went away from others for rest. He say he only look at trees and sky, then big man over six foot comes running from rocks at him, hit old daddy to ground, hit him on head and side arm, hit him hard and make grunts. Daddy yell then others come

> and Sasquatch run away fast. They see Sasquatch running and daddy blood on his head . . . Grandma say Sasquatch big nice man is catch little Indian woman for make love to all they want. Old daddy scared of woods after, never go anywhere, just stay home." [1]

What intrigues us the most about the above is Mary Joe's repetition of what her grandmother had told her: Sasquatch big nice man is catch little Indian woman for make love to all they want. Biologists will argue that one species cannot successfully mate and produce offspring with another. But we cannot say with certainty that the ABSM types are not at least partially human. They are different, to be sure, but are they totally nonhuman? Could there be some element of truth to the ancient legends from other lands that the "Wild Men of the Woods" kidnap human females and indulge in scandalous hanky-panky?

One flaw to this admittedly sensational speculation is the fact that the female Sasquatch has been observed on a number of occasions. Or, at least, hairy humanoids with pendulant breasts have been seen and it is generally assumed that they were female. Since the animals are naked, witnesses who have been close enough to notice have reported upon their obvious masculinity or, in the cases of the apparent females, their lack of it

In a notarized affidavit, signed on August 26, 1957, William Roe stated:

> My first impression was of a huge man about six feet tall, almost three feet wide, and probably weighing somewhere near three hundred pounds. It was covered from head to foot with dark brown, silver-tipped hair. But as it came closer I saw by its breasts that it was female.

> And yet, its torso was not curved like a female's. Its broad frame was straight from shoulder to hip. Its arms were much thicker than a man's arms and longer, reaching almost to its knees. Its feet were broader proportionately than a man's, about five inches wide in the front and tapering to much thinner heels. When it walked it placed the heel of its foot down first, and I could see the grey-brown skin or hide on the soles of its feet.
>
> The head was higher at the back than at the front The nose was broad and flat. The lips and chin protruded farther than its nose. But the hair that covered it, leaving bare only the parts of its face around the mouth, nose and ears, made it resemble an animal as much as a human. None of this hair, even on the back of its head, was longer than an inch, and that on its face much shorter. Its ears were shaped like a human's ears. But its eyes were small and black like a bear's. And its neck was also unhuman, thicker and shorter than any man's I have ever seen.

Mr. Roe's studied description came from his encounter in October 1955 when he was climbing Mica Mountain near Tete Jaune Cache, Alberta, Canada. The time was about three o'clock in the afternoon. The report continued:

> Finally, the wild thing must have gotten my scent, for it looked directly at me through an opening in the brush. A look of amazement crossed its face. It looked so comical at that moment I had to grin. Still in a crouched position, it backed up three or four steps, then straightened up to its full height and started to walk

rapidly back the way it had come. For a moment it watched over its shoulder as it went, not exactly afraid, but as though it wanted no contact with anything strange.

The thought came to me that if I shot it I would possibly have a specimen of great interest to scientists the world over . . . I leveled my rifle. The creature was still walking rapidly away, again turning its head in my direction. I lowered the rifle. Although I have called the creature 'it,' I felt now that it was a human being, and I knew I would never forgive myself if I killed it.

Just as it came to the other patch of brush it threw its head back and made a peculiar noise that seemed to be half laugh and half language, and which I could only describe as a kind of whinny. Then it walked from the small brush into a stand of lodge-pole pines.

In several similar stories armed hunters have declared that they could not bring themselves to fire their weapons. The creatures seem too human to kill. "It would be like shooting a man in cold blood," many have said.

In an article for the San Francisco Chronicle (December 7, 1965), George Draper discussed a hair-raising story which added to the evidence that the ABSM may sometimes hunt human beings. Mr. O. R. Edwards, owner of a lock and safe company in Fresno, California, testified that he had encountered a man-animal in the southern Siskiyou Mountains during World War II:

"I saw a large man-like creature covered with brown hair," Edwards stated. "It was about seven feet tall and it was carrying in its arms what seemed like a man. I could only see legs and shoes. It was heading straight downhill on the run.

"I, of course, did not believe what I had just seen. So I closed my eyes and shook my head to sort of clear things up.

"I looked down the hill again in time to see the back and shoulders and head of a man-like thing covered with brown hair. It was disappearing into the brush some seventy to eighty yards below."

Edwards also claimed that the creature emitted "the damnedest whistling-scream I ever heard." Draper noted that "other observers have described the man-animal's strange cry as 'a vibrating sound' or like the sound of a steam locomotive whistle or the sound of metal tearing." One witness, a geologist named R. A. E. Morley, said the animal issued "a vibrating wail, like a person in pain."

Did Mr. Edwards actually see an ABSM kidnap a human? There are many tales to this effect, some told by people who purportedly had been the victims of such events and had lived to tell the story. The most celebrated is the elaborately detailed narrative of an elderly Canadian, Mr. Albert Ostman, who claims that he was carried off by a tribe of Sasquatches in 1924 and held prisoner for several days. He described males, females and "children." It would take several pages for us to recount his whole story properly. He has repeated it in many interviews and on radio, and Ivan Sanderson gives the full details in his book. The story is so incredible that it raises an element of doubt. But, then, our years of experience in this field have taught us that the more bizarre a story is, the more likely it is to be true. Liars who want to be taken seriously don't try to "sell" absurdities.

The California "Big Foot" surfaced in the 1950s and created a sensation of several years duration, particularly in northern California close to the Oregon border. Oregon has also had its share of ABSM sightings, as has the state of Washington, still further north. Apparently the creatures have been moving up and down the western mountain ranges from Canada, and when the many sightings are laid out on a map they seem to follow a definite

mountain route. In addition to the hundreds of physical sightings there have also been hundreds of "footprint" discoveries throughout that region. From time to time local authorities and Type B scientists have tried to quell the "monster mania" by denouncing the tracks as the work of practical jokers. This would mean that some hardy soul has gone through the trouble of constructing a special pair of giant shoes which can leave imprints so convincing that zoologists and anthropologists could be fooled by them. Said hoaxster would then have to trek thousands of miles through very rugged areas, scattering his tracks in places where the chance of anyone ever finding them would be almost zero. And he would have to be very persistent, stomping up and down the mountains year after year for almost two decades.

"Big Foot" is now an integral part of California folklore. The Humboldt State College Library at Arcata, California, has compiled one of the world's most complete collections of Abominable Snowman literature and lore. A man in Oakland, California, Mr. George F. Haas, periodically publishes a newsletter, The Bigfoot Bulletin, for monster collectors. Up in Yakima, Washington, the Abominable Snowmen Club of America thrives, selling phonograph records of eyewitness testimony and offering an ornate membership certificate to those who wish to prove their devotion to the subject.[2]

In a number of instances "Big Foot" has displayed superhuman strength by angrily throwing heavy objects such as metal drums filled with gasoline, and hurling huge tractor tires great distances, somewhat to the consternation of construction workers and lumberers in the remote "Big Foot" haunts. This tire-throwing feature seems to be a peculiar ABSM habit and has turned up in a number of reports.

On the one hand, part of our testimonial evidence suggests that

the ABSM is abysmally stupid, more animal than human. Some have been tempted to jump to the conclusion that he has big feet and a small brain. Yet, there are contradictory reports which indicate that the animal is keenly alert, even sensitive, and is able to easily outsmart and elude his pursuers. Perhaps we are trying to cope with several entirely different animals. The ten-foot giants may have only a tenuous relationship to the smaller ABSM. Some may be more human than animal, and vice versa. Some may be part of another phenomenon altogether, more psychic or hallucinatory than real. We will deal with that aspect further on.

There is now substantial physical evidence proving the existence of genuine man-like animals. First of all, we have plaster casts of giant footprints collected from many continents—from the remote borderlands of Tibet to the pastoral hills of Indiana. Many of these casts match! Scientists have spun fanciful theories about the Earth's ancient past from a single piece of bone or a single fossil fragment. The ABSM evidence is far more substantial than the fragmentary evidence which has been accepted as support for many anthropological theories.

Second, unique animal droppings have been found at many of the monster sites and analyzed by qualified men. These materials indicate that the animals are vegetarians in some areas, and live on small rodents and wildlife in others. There is now enough of this evidence so we can reach some general scientific conclusions if only we could collect the materials together in a single place for comparative studies.

Third, we now have photographic evidence of a high order. Motion pictures have been made of one of the creatures.

The first alleged ABSM photo is admittedly very flimsy. It was published in the San Francisco Chronicle on December 7, 1965, and depicts a black human-like figure between some trees. The figure is quite indistinct and the story behind the photo is even

more vague. It seems that a man identifying himself as Zack Hamilton dropped off a film for developing at the Brooks camera store in San Francisco around 1960. He told manager Dick Russell an eerie tale about being stalked by a hairy monster in central Oregon, and he said he had taken some pictures of it. Hamilton never returned for his finished photos, and Mr. Russell, when he first examined them, said, "I got prickly all over when I realized they were the pictures the oldtimer said he had taken in the brush. I never saw anything like them." Russell filed them away and forgot about them until he read some of the Chronicle's "Big Foot" stories. About all we can say about the photo is that the figure does look broad—much broader than a man—and it doesn't appear to be walking like a bear or any other known animal.

The motion picture is another story. It created quite a sensation in 1968 and has been carefully studied by a variety of scientists and government officials. Some believe it to be absolutely authentic. Others are bewildered and dubious. We have it on good authority that the man who took it has not made a nickel on it. He has, in fact, been denounced as a hoaxster in some Type B circles. If the film had been taken by a vacationing school teacher, a minister, or even a teenaged hunter, it might have had somewhat more impact. Unfortunately, it was taken by one of America's leading monster hunters and ABSM authorities, Mr. Roger Patterson.

Mr. Patterson was first attracted to this subject in 1959 when he read an article by Ivan T. Sanderson. He began making field investigations in his home state of Washington and interviewing witnesses who had claimed to have glimpsed old "Big Foot." In his treks about the state he discovered a number of the classic foot tracks and dutifully made plaster casts of them. He established the Abominable Snowmen Club of America in the early 1960s, and spent all of his spare time and money traveling and investigating new cases.

On October 20, 1967, Patterson and Bob Gimlin were exploring the "Big Foot" country northeast of Eureka, California on horseback. They rounded a bend and came upon a small creek. On the other side, about a hundred feet away, there stood a huge, furry creature. At first they thought it was a bear but then it stood upright and started to walk away. Their horses became terrified and threw them. Patterson managed to grab his loaded movie camera and he ran after the animal. It was a female. He excitedly cranked off several feet of film while she strolled into the brush and disappeared.

"She was about seven feet tall, and from examination of her tracks later, we estimate her to weigh in the neighborhood of three hundred pounds," Patterson said. "She was covered with short, shiny black hair, even on her big, droopy breasts. She seemed to have a sort of peak on the back of her head, but whether this was more hair or not I don't know.

"Anyway, hair came right down her forehead to meet her eyebrows, if she had any; and it came up to just under her cheekbones. And she had no neck. What I mean is that the bottom of her head just seemed to broaden out onto her big muscular shoulders.

"She walked like a man—a big man in a hurry . . . the soles of her feet were definitely light in color."

Among those who viewed the film was Dr. John R. Napier, Director of Primate Biology at the Smithsonian Institute in Washington, D.C. He later stated, "I observed nothing that, on scientific grounds, would point conclusively to a hoax. I am satisfied that the walk of the creature shown in the film was consistent with the bipedal striding gait of a man.

"The bodily proportions of the creature, as far as could be seen, appeared to be within the normal limits for man. The appearance of the high crest on top of the skull is unknown, but given a

creature as heavily built as the subject, such a bio-chemical adaptation to an exclusively fibrous raw vegetable diet is not impossible."

But Roger Patterson had not solved the mystery. He had only compounded it.

Now we had a seemingly authentic movie of an ABSM female. All we needed to clinch our case was a body of one of the creatures. The final amazing chapter to this epic was written in December 1968, when a body turned up and was examined by Ivan Sanderson and Dr. Bernard Heuvelmans, the great European authority. This should have settled the matter once and for all. But it didn't. The discovery was given a big play in the press but when reporters went to view the remains they discovered only a wax replica. So new stories were published denouncing the whole affair as a hoax. Could two experienced authorities like Sanderson and Heuvelmans have made such a mistake?

On May 3, 1967, the corpus delecti went on exhibit in a refrigerated van attached to a traveling show in the Midwest. Thousands of people paid thirty-five cents for the privilege of trooping through the van that season and the next. The barker outside made no effort to identify the creature, merely classifying it as another of nature's mysteries. The body was deeply entombed in a huge cake of ice with soft lights focused on it. People entered the van not knowing what they were going to see and left not knowing what they had seen. Finally, a herpetologist from Milwaukee, Wisconsin, Mr. Terry Cullen, paid his thirty-five cents, wandered into the exhibit, and then rushed to a telephone to call Ivan T. Sanderson long distance. Sanderson, long hardened from constant exposure to hoaxes and the almost endless nonsense that revolved around the study of monsters, was wary at first. But Cullen's credentials were respectable, and his description of the frozen animal was detailed enough to excite his interest.

In December 1968 Sanderson and Heuvelmans descended upon the little village of Rolling Stone, Minnesota, where the refrigerated van was kept during the winter under the care of Frank Hansen.

The scientists worked methodically in the freezing cold, setting up lights and cameras to photograph the cake of ice from all angles, making careful measurements and drawings. They knew that if they tried to free the body from the ice the decay would be accelerated and the specimen would quickly be reduced to a heap of bones and rotting flesh.

It was shaped like an adult human male, six feet tall and covered with dark brown hair three to four inches long. Visible portions of the skin were a pale white. The hands were almost human except for thumbs which were excessively long. The feet measured eight inches wide across the toes; the little toes were almost as big as the others. Thick hair covered the feet. The hands and feet were more human than apelike, the scientists noted.

The left arm was twisted awkwardly upward, and was visibly fractured midway between the wrist and the elbow, giving the appearance of a "sawdust doll." The right arm was twisted also, with the open palm spread flat against the abdomen.

Somebody had apparently shot it in the right eye, and the eye was dangling out of the socket. It also seemed to have been shot in the chest, and Heuvelmans speculated that the creature may have been hit in the left arm when it attempted to defend itself. Its face had a large pug nose, more like that of a Pekingese dog than a gorilla, with large, circular nostrils pointing straight forward. The mouth was wide with no visible lips, and some small teeth were exposed. These were in no way similar to the teeth of chimps or gorillas.

"To me—at least—the most interesting features of all are some folds and wrinkle lines around the mouth just below the cheeks," Sanderson wrote in Argosy (May 1969). "These are absolutely

human, and are like those seen in a heavy jowled, older white man."

The neck was so short that it hardly was a neck at all The face and forehead were hairless.

Sanderson was of the opinion that the being had been killed somewhere on the North American Continent very recently. Another member of the team, geologist Jack Ullrich, concurred. "It can be stated categorically that this corpse is only a few years old," he said.

Dr. Heuvelmans prepared a scientific paper on the find, comparing the corpse with the known characteristics of the supposedly extinct Neanderthal man. He gave the creature a scientific label: Homo pongoides ("Ape-like man").

What happened next is best told in Ivan Sanderson's own words, in a statement published in Pursuit (July 1969), the journal he edits:

> Mr. Hansen told us that he was not the owner; that he did not know what the thing was; and that he didn't want to know as it was a better exhibit for fairs and midways when advertised as a mystery. Later, he told us that he had been led to it, in a deep-freeze plant in Hong Kong, and had subsequently bought it, on the request of the owner. He refused to say who this person was or how the object was imported into the country. He further told us that said owner had had a copy made in Hollywood by a professional model-maker (for film makers and wax museums) "just in case something like this happened." The 'this' was the possibility that a scientist of Heuvelmans' stature, who happens to have spent over twenty years investigating the possibility of such ultra-primitive hominids still existing, examining it, and then

publishing a scientific paper on it—which he did in the Bulletin of the Royal Institute of Natural Sciences of Belgium in February of this year.

As a result of this publication, the world press became alerted, and many scientists and notably the Smithsonian Institution became interested and the latter formally requested permission to inspect and X-ray the specimen. This request was flatly refused by Mr. Hansen in a letter in which he also stated that the specimen which we have inspected had been removed by the owner and would never again be exhibited, while a manmade copy was being prepared for the coming show season. Why such was needed when a copy was allegedly already on hand is not clear. However, the Smithsonian was led to a professional model-maker who stated that he had made just such a copy in April of 1967. Meantime, we had traced to another professional model-maker who stated just as categorically, and for the record, that he had made another in April of this year. Both parties asked that their names not be divulged, but our man did say that he had been so requested by Frank Hansen! Hansen then turned up with the new model on exhibit in St. Paul, Minnesota, with a new truck containing a 'something' on ice. This, however, did not resemble the thing we saw, and in five essential points. Further, the new signs on the trailer called the exhibit 'SIBERSKOYA CREATURE—A Manmade Allusion' (sic); and it had a large notice saying 'As investigated by the FBI.'

Incidently, the FBI did not investigate the matter since, as they stated officially to the Smithsonian, they had no grounds for doing so. In view of these facts, the Smithsonian decided to drop the matter; and in this we

> heartily concurred because there would be no use in examining a wax or latex-rubber model clothed in bear fur and stuffed with sawdust! However, there are a number of points left up in the air, and we can almost guarantee that you have not heard the last of this case by a long shot.

So the find of the century turned into the hoax of the decade. What happened to the specimen Dr. Heuvelmans and Ivan Sanderson originally examined? And why would the mysterious owner go through the trouble and expense of constructing two—possibly even three—fake models (such models do not come cheap)? He will have to sell a lot of thirty-five-cent-tickets to recover his investment. If the original body was real, who shot it and where?

This promising bit of physical evidence collapsed before our eyes. But we still have another kind of solid evidence—the corroborative testimony of hundreds of eyewitnesses from all over the world. There may be no ABSM encased in a block of ice in Minnesota, but there seem to be plenty of live specimens dashing about all over the world.

TEN

Creatures from the Black Lagoon

A HUNTER is splashing alone through a swamp. Suddenly his dog begins to howl, flips his tail between his legs, and runs off. The brush ahead of the startled hunter stirs and a great hoary shadow rises up, uttering an unearthly screech. It towers above the man by two or three feet. He is too surprised and too paralyzed with fear to raise his rifle. The thing shuffles off into the blackness of the swamp.

This drama has been acted so many times over the years that the basic job of simply cataloging such incidents is almost impossible. The swamp creature is not necessarily a special breed of monster, though. In most cases the descriptions are very similar to our mountaineering Abominable Snowman. We shall call him the Abominable Swamp Slob, or A.S.S., for short. While the ABSM thrives in forests and high places, the A.S.S. prefers low-level marshes and bayous. There's hardly a respectable swamp in the Deep South that does not boast at least one A.S.S. As usual, our local historical experts, the Indians, have many legends and stories about the swamp creatures. It would seem that all wet, dark,

forbidding places are inhabited by unspeakable monsters of some sort. Frequently our Swamp Slobs blunder onto highways, dripping with water and an ungodly stench, and try to flag down passing motorists. Perhaps one of these Slobs served as the original inspiration for the popular horror movie of some years ago, The Creature from the Black Lagoon.

Swamps have also provided a strange attraction for flying saucers. There have been some spectacular sightings in and around swamps in recent years. The ABSM episodes discussed in the previous chapters may appear to have little or no relationship to unidentified flying objects, but as we move along you may receive some rude shocks. UFOs have a habit of chasing automobiles like naughty puppies. So do our hairy humanoids. UFOs like to sneak up on and scare lovers parked in isolated places. So do our ABSM and A.S.S. UFOs seem to be able to cause power failures, auto stallings, and radio interference. So, incredibly, do our smelly freaks!

On Sunday evening, May 18, 1969, the lights went out in a small area outside of Rising Sun, Indiana (Ohio County). The home of Mr. and Mrs. Lester Kaiser was without power for two hours. They thought nothing of the incident at the time, although strange lights and weird flying objects had occasionally been sighted along a nearby ridge.

At 7:30 P.M. on the following evening, May 19, young George Kaiser was walking towards a tractor on the farm when his dog began to growl and bark. He looked up and saw a grotesque figure standing about twenty-five feet away. Whatever it was, it was the size of a man and covered with black fur.

"I watched it for about two minutes before it saw me," young Kaiser told investigator Bonnie Roman. "It stood in a fairly upright position although it was bent over about in the middle of its back, with arms about the same length as a normal human being . . . I'd

say it was about five feet seven or eight, in between there, and it had a very muscular structure. The head sat directly on the shoulders and the face was dark black, with hair which stuck out on the back of its head; had eyes set close together and a very short forehead. It was all covered with hair except for the back of the hands and the face. The hands looked like normal hands, not claws."

George was transfixed with shock and fright for a moment, then he made a move to get into the family automobile parked nearby. The creature made "a strange grunting sound," turned, jumped over a ditch, and ran down the road at high speed, quickly disappearing out of sight. Footprints were found in the dirt by the ditch. They showed three toes plus a big toe. Plaster casts were later made of these prints.

A neighbor of the Kaisers', Mr. Charles Rolfing, reportedly watched an unidentified flying object for about eight minutes, shortly after 10:15 P.M. on May 20. He studied it through binoculars and described it as being a glowing greenish-white.

So here we have a sequence of interesting coincidences. A local power failure on May 18; a creature sighting on May 19; and a UFO sighting on May 20. As Ian Fleming's Gold-finger remarked, "Once is happenstance; twice is coincidence; three times is enemy action." If you read the rest of this book carefully you will become aware of many surprising coincidences. As they mount up they become correlations. The correlations, in turn, mount to become evidence. The only way to feed you all the evidence is to bury you in the data. We intend to give you enough data so that you may draw your own conclusions. Imagine that you are sitting on a jury and we are lawyers parading our witnesses before you.

Type B scientists, the villains of this book, have a pat explanation for each type of anomalous occurrence. Their standard answer to the local United States ABSM sightings is that an ape or

a gorilla has "escaped from a zoo or circus." They have wheeled this one out in scores of events, despite the fact that energetic reporters and police carefully checked all known zoos and circuses and always learned that no such escapee was at large. But if a group of people should see a hairy humanoid near your hometown tomorrow you can almost be certain that the next day some college professor or self-styled "expert" will sagely announce that "obviously a gorilla has escaped from the zoo"—even if there is no zoo in your area, or, if there is, it has never had a resident gorilla. As we stated earlier, real experts have estimated that the entire gorilla population worldwide—including those in zoos—is four hundred. The Type B scientists have got them outnumbered.

Back in 1931 an "escaped ape" ("obviously") was running around Long Island, only a few minutes from New York City. In June of that year half a dozen persons at Lewis & Valentine's nursery near Mineola, Long Island, excitedly reported the sudden appearance and disappearance of a fleet-footed "ape-like animal, hairy creature—about four feet tall." "Monster mania" struck Long Island. The police received so many alarmed calls that the Nassau County Police Department sent out ape-hunting details armed with shotguns. No circus was in town. A head count was taken of the gorillas in the nearest zoos. Nobody was missing. Still, the hairy little fellow kept pouncing out of bushes, scaring Long Islanders half to death. On June 29, Captain Earle Comstock organized a dozen heavily armed police patrols. They were joined by twenty hardy citizens armed with pitchforks and other weapons. The-four-foot-tall hairy thing must have seen the mob coming, and all the monster busters found were a lot of footprints: "The prints seemed to be solely those of the hind feet and were about the size and shape of a man's hand, though the thumb was set further back than would be the case with a man's hand."

Just to keep the police on their toes, Mrs. E. H. Tandy of

Malverne, Long Island, reported seeing a lion in her back yard! It took the police three hours to locate a lion gun, so by the time they reached the Tandys' the animal had ambled off, never to be seen again.

The "ape's" final appearances were in the middle of July. A nurseryman named Stockman reported that his family had seen a gorilla thrashing about in the shrubbery near Huntington. Soon afterwards a farmer three miles away called in to report seeing the thing. Police found tracks at both places and tried to follow them, losing the trail in the nearby woods. That was supposedly the end of the Long Island "ape."

Or was it? This particular section of Long Island, with Huntington in the north, Mineola in the east, and Babylon in the south, constitutes a very interesting UFO "window." We have spent many days there in the past three years, talking to flying saucer witnesses and collecting some very odd information. There have been numerous monster sightings in a rather desolate hilly and wooded section south of Huntington since 1966. Neckers parked in an area known, appropriately enough, as Mount Misery claim to have been terrified by a giant seven-foot, human-shaped something. It turns up periodically in a place where many low-flying, glowing, saucer-shaped and cigar-shaped objects have been seen. The leading expert in Mount Misery is a young lady named Jaye P. Paro. Miss Paro is a reporter and radio broadcaster and has been studying the history of the area for years. She has made efficient and responsible investigations into many of the UFO and creature sightings, and in January 1969 she succeeded in photographing a very unusual being in the secluded woods on the top of the Mount. Fortunately she had a witness with her and he signed the following statement:

At 8 A.M. on Sunday, January 12, 1969, I drove with

> Jaye P. Paro and Barbara LaMonica of Huntington, New York, to the area of Mount Misery for the purpose of taking photographs of the landscape. We pulled our car into a partial clearing on the left side of Mt. Misery Road, then decided to continue on foot. We decided to photograph an area which was located about five hundred feet from our car.
>
> Jaye was ready to take her first shot, when through the corner of my eye I caught a glimpse of a moving black object. Knowing we were completely alone in this desolate area, we were very scared. Immediately Jaye turned and snapped the first two pictures. The three of us were horrified to see the figure of something that resembled a human, disfigured face, long wild black hair, and dressed in a long black garment. It retreated immediately further into the bushes, made no sounds, and made no attempt to communicate with us. Frozen in her tracks Jaye dropped her camera. I picked it up and shot the two remaining pictures. Barbara started to run to the car. Jaye and I followed and we took off in a cloud of dust
>
> [signed] RICHARD DIMARTINO

What was it? A practical joker lying in wait on a bitter cold Sunday at 8 A.M.? Not very likely. A hermit? There are no rumors of a hermit living around Mount Misery. The photo depicts a dark blob with a very bushy head of hair extending a pale, long-fingered hand. (This picture was published in Beyond Magazine [July 1969], together with an article by Miss Paro on other unusual incidents around Mount Misery.) The residences around Mount Misery are mostly estates owned by officials from the United Nations and by other dignitaries. The late Henry L. Stimson,

Secretary of War during World War II, maintained a mansion on the very summit of the Mount

To demonstrate our theory that these events tend to recur in the same "window" areas year after year and even century after century, we will present a catalog of monster sightings summarizing many of the major and minor incidents of the past few years. This material has been collected from many sources, including the files of Ivan T. Sanderson, Roger Patterson, Loren Coleman, FATE magazine, and, of course, our own swelling files. We have organized this material by states, to give you some idea of the geographical dispersion of these reports, and then we will follow with a chart outlining the significant correlations found in many of these reports. We have not tampered with these stories in any way. We present the facts as originally reported. We have, of course, greatly condensed each item. Some of these reports cover many pages. Some have included photographs, plaster casts, and lengthy tape recordings of the witnesses. Others are based upon lengthy newspaper stories written and published by competent local reporters. Devout monster collectors will recognize some of these items. Some may complain because we have found it necessary to be so terse. This catalog is by no means complete. We have not, for example, attempted to present even a fraction of the California "Big Foot" sightings, and we have weeded out the hundreds of sightings involving only the discovery of inexplicable giant footprints. We have also omitted, or tried to omit, the many unconfirmed or "hearsay" reports which flood our mail, but a few have been included and properly identified as such. As any statistician will tell you, a sampling must be random if any valid conclusions are to be reached.

ALABAMA

1. A "Booger," as the locals called it, created quite a stir around Clanton, Alabama, in the fall of 1960. Several witnesses reported seeing a tall, hairy creature around Walnut Creek. A posse was formed and found footprints which resembled those of "a giant ape." Shortly after the posse quit the chase, the Reverand E. C. Hand saw the monster near Liberty Hill, grabbed his shotgun, and pursued it. But it got away.

"I can make my dogs catch a mule," Reverand Hand said, "But I could not get them to venture out toward the 'Booger'."

As time passed there were more reports. Some witnesses claimed the animal made a sound "like a woman screaming." Others said it sounded more like an elephant. It also prowled peach orchards, apparently sampling peaches.

Five years later, on August 30, 1965, the Union-Banner at Clanton carried this illuminating story: "Some six years ago several people out on Walnut Creek a mile or so from Clan-ton reported seeing some animal like a bear. It made some curious sounds at night kindly [sic] like a woman in distress. It ranged up and down the creak for a distance of some ten miles.

"Then some four years ago something made tracks in peach orchards some three miles south of Clanton, near large swamps. It was supposed to vanish into the swamps at night. A cement cast was made of the track, about the size of a person's foot but looking more like a hand. The cast is still somewhere in Clanton."

CALIFORNIA

2. The following account was published in 1896 in a booklet titled The Hermit of Siskiyou by L. W. Music:

Note 1. A Del Norte Record correspondent, writing from

> Happy Camp, Siskiyou county, Jan. 2, 1886, discourses as follows: "I do not remember to have seen any reference to the 'Wild Man' which haunts this part of the country, so I shall allude to him briefly. Not a great while since, Mr. Jack Dover, one of our most trustworthy citizens, while hunting saw an object standing one hundred and fifty yards from him picking berries and tender shoots from the bushes. The thing was of gigantic size—about seven feet high—with a bull dog head, short ears and long hair; it was also furnished with a beard, and was free from hair on such parts of its body as is common among men. Its voice was shrill, or soprano, and very human, like that of a woman in great fear. Mr. Dover could not see its footprints as it walked on hard soil. He aimed his gun at the animal, or whatever it was, several times, but because it was so human would not shoot. The range of the curiosity is between Marble Mountain and the vicinity of Happy Camp. A number of people have seen it and all agree in their descriptions except some make it taller than others. It is apparently herbiverous and makes winter quarters in some caves of Marble Mountain.

3. "It ran upright like a man, swingin' long, hairy arms," said Ray Kerr of McKinleyville, California, as he described his sighting of "Big Foot" on Sunday, October 12, 1958. He was near Bluff Creek when he saw it. "It happened so fast, it's kinda hard to give a really close description. But it was covered with hair. It had no clothes. It looked eight to ten feet tall to me."

Roy Wallace, said he had seen a similar creature a short time earlier. It was hairy, walked stooped over, had long dangling arms, and was "four feet across the shoulders."

The mutilated bodies of four dogs were found in the area by Curtis Mitchell, an Indian, on the evening of Kerr's sighting. "They looked as if they had been ripped apart," he said. "One of them had apparently been slammed against a tree. The bodies were still warm when they were discovered off the Elk River road about five miles south of Eureka, California."

4. Charles Wetzel was driving home in Riverside, California, on Saturday night, November 8, 1958, and as he neared the point where North Main Street crosses the Santa Ana River something leaped in front of his car.

"It had a round, scarecrowish head," he said, "like something out of Halloween.

"It wasn't human. It had a longer arm than anything I'd ever seen. When it saw me in the car it reached all the way back to the windshield and began clawing at me.

"It didn't have any ears. The face was all round. The eyes were shining like something fluorescent, and it had a protuberant mouth. It was scaly, like leaves."

Wetzel reached for the .22 pistol he carried in the car and "stomped on the gas."

"The thing fell back from the car and it gurgled. The noise it made didn't sound human. I think I hit it. I heard something hit the pan under the car."

There were long sweeping scratches on his windshield but nothing was found at the site. The next night a six-foot-tall black thing leaped out of the bushes near the Wetzel site and frightened another motorist. The Wetzel story was widely circulated by the wire services and has become a monster "classic."

5. Walking home in late evening, a resident of Hoopa Valley, identified only as Peters, saw a strange creature jump out, utter a

surprised grunt, jump a five-foot fence in one agile leap, and disappear into the darkness. It was not a bear, appeared not too much taller than a man, but was of tremendous width.[1]

6. Five witnesses reported that a tall, hairy creature was discovered ransacking their car while they were picnicking in a forest outside San Diego, California, in July 1966. It growled and ran off, they said, hiding behind a tree and springing at them as they later drove past. It tried to reach into the window of the car, they claimed. Further on they saw another tall figure sitting by the side of the road, apparently watching them go by rather nonchalantly. They said these beings were covered with reddish hair and were well over six-feet tall. They were not bears or other known animals.[2]

7. Late in July 1966 two frightened teen-aged girls reported they had been in a car near Lytle Creek outside of Fontana, California, when a "bush beast" suddenly stood up beside their vehicle. They described it as being seven-feet tall, with brown hair and covered with moss and slime. Their report kicked off a monster epidemic and over 250 people, most of them armed to the teeth, poured into the area on a massive monster hunt. The Bernardino County sheriff's office said that amateur "bush beast" hunters were swarming nightly over the barren foothills, filling the night with wild gunfire. The slime-covered A.S.S. got away. Fontana is only about twenty miles north of Riverside, site of the 1958 Wetzel sighting. There has also been considerable UFO activity in this particular area over the past few years.

8. A treasure hunter, Harold Lancaster, was prospecting in the Borrego Sink near Borrego Springs, California, in July 1968, when he saw an "apeman."

"I was camped up on a mesa one morning when I saw a man walking in the desert," Lancaster reported. "The figure came closer. I thought it was another prospector. Then I picked up my binoculars and saw the strangest sight of my life.

"It was a real giant apeman!"

Lancaster fired his .22 pistol in the air. "I was afraid the beast might get too close," he said. "The 'sandman' jumped a good three feet off the ground when the sounds of the shots reached him. He turned his head, looked toward me and then took off running in the other direction."[3]

FLORIDA

9. In 1963 several persons on a ranch outside of Holopaw, Florida, said they had seen an ape-like creature running across a field. A "prominent cattleman and citrus grower" claimed he was in a group that been within a few feet of the creature and that "it was definitely an ape of some kind."

In 1966–67, the Holopaw "ape" was back. Eugene Crosby said it was five feet tall, hairy, very broad, and walked on two feet. It threw a tire tube at him. Other stories described how a six-foot-tall "ape" attacked two hunters on the Desert (Mormon) ranch. They are supposed to have shot at it and it went screaming into the darkness. Later an unoccupied tent house on the ranch was broken into, furnishings were broken and scattered, and blood stains were found.

10. A harsh, coughing sound made Ralph "Bud" Chambers of Elfers, Florida, look around as he was walking in some woods near the Anclote River in the summer of 1966. He saw a giant hairy thing standing in the trees. "The thing had a rancid, putrid odor

like stale urine," Chambers said.

He hurried away and brought back a friend. They followed the creature's tracks into a swampy area. Chambers' dogs refused to follow the scent, but whined and could not be coaxed into going near the creature's trail.

Later Chambers had another sighting. He said the thing was over seven feet tall, and "at least four feet wide" at the chest.

11. In the summer of 1967 Chambers was awakened by the howling of one of his dogs. He looked out and saw the creature standing in his back yard.

"The thing just seemed to stare straight ahead. This time the dog was so mad that it did attack the creature, probably because the dog felt the thing was invading home territory. The dog started snapping at its legs, but the thing did not take any notice at all of the dog.

"The dog kept biting at its ankles and feet, and the creature very slowly and methodically turned and started walking down the road that leads back to the swamp and the river," Chambers reported.

12. An alleged UFO landing had occurred in Brooksville, Florida, in 1965. There has been much UFO activity throughout Florida in the past twenty years. During the peak "flap" period of March-April 1966, Mrs. Eula Lewis of Brooksville reported that local residents were being disturbed by inexplicable "shrill screaming" sounds. She heard her dogs barking one night, and when she looked out the window she saw a "big hairy thing standing in the yard. The thing was swinging its arms and the dogs were yapping to beat hell trying to get it. It started going back into the woods with the dogs still chasing it."

13. There were several hairy monster reports around Brooksville

in 1966–67. In May 1967 Joan Whritenour was invited to a ranch near New Port Richey where strange three-toed tracks had been found. The county sheriff revealed that cattle were disappearing. No truck tracks or other evidence had been found to lead to the rustlers. "Just where does a rustler put a full grown cow?" a sheriff's deputy asked Mrs. Whritenour. "Sure as hell not in his back pocket!"

14. A young woman was changing a tire on a lonely stretch of highway outside Brooksville, Florida, on Wednesday night, November 30, 1966, when she heard a noise in the bushes and became aware of a most unpleasant odor. Then a huge thing with large green eyes and an eerie greenish glow on one side of its hairy torso stood up beside the road and studied her. She was terrified. The creature walked off into the woods when another car came along and stopped.

15. "There's a terrible smell around here. Can't you smell it?" the girl complained. She was one of four teenagers parked in a Lovers' Lane near Elfers, Florida, in January 1967. As the others took deep breaths "an animal about the size of a large chimpanzee" sprang onto the hood of the car.

"Then we panicked!" the driver later told investigator Joan Whritenour. "The thing looked like a big chimp, but it was greenish in color, with glowing green eyes. I started the motor and the thing jumped off and ran back into the woods. We tore like blazes back to the dance we were supposed to be attending."

A police officer from New Port Richey later visited the site and found a sticky green substance which remains unidentified.

GEORGIA

16. In August 1956 Joseph Whaley, an employee of the Georgia Department of Forestry, was driving an open jeep about thirty miles outside of Edison, Georgia, when a six-foot-tall, dark gray, hairy man-shaped creature blundered out of the brush and chased him. It grabbed at him, apparently trying to haul him from the jeep, scratching his arm. Whaley said, "It looked like a gorilla except it had claws and long pointed ears." He was not anxious to go back for a closer look.

17. A man named Tant King was walking in a field near Edison, Georgia, one night in 1956, when he was frightened by "a little naked hairy man about three feet high" who came out of a nearby woods and walked along the edge of a fence. Other men called to the scene found tracks and strips of white curly hair about three inches long on the fence. The hair was analyzed at a local crime lab and found to be human. A young reporter covered the story and wrote a yarn about a creature "eight feet tall," much to Mr. King's annoyance. A zoologist named O. K. Fletcher speculated it could have been a kangaroo!

ILLINOIS

18. The Reverend Lepton Harpole was taking a stroll one evening in 1941, near his home outside of Mt. Vernon, Illinois, when he paused to light his pipe. Suddenly a beast leaped from a nearby tree, knocking off his hat and knocking the pipe out of his mouth. Harpole said it jumped up and down while "making a very queer sound." It was, he felt, of "the ape family," about three feet tall and dark brown in color.

"This is as true a story as was ever told," Harpole's brother said.

In 1941–42 scores of people near Mount Vernon, Illinois reported seeing a large, hairy humanoid, usually described as "a large baboon." When farmers tried to pursue it they said that it was able to leap ditches twenty feet wide with ease. It killed at least one dog near Bonnie, Illinois. Large posses of armed men searched the region in vain. Although it left a trail of footprints and dead animals, it seems to have vanished into thin air.

19. In an interview with Loren E. Coleman in November 1962, Steven Collins said that he, Robert Earle, and two unidentified men had seen a large gray animal standing upright in the middle of a creek east of Decatur, Illinois, off East William Street Road. They felt it was definitely not a bear.

20. "It looked like a half-man, half-horse," said James McKinney of Centerville, Illinois, when he tried to describe the creature he had seen in May 1963. Centerville police received more than fifty calls within a few days, all reporting the strange animal. Police searches failed to find anything.

21. Four young people were parked in a car in the Montezuma Hills outside of Decatur, Illinois, on September 22, 1965, when a black, man-like monster approached their car. The young people fled, but later the boys returned to the spot alone and again saw the monster. Police officers searched the area fruitlessly. "We don't know what they saw," one officer said, "but they appeared to be well-frightened."

22. Tim Bullock and Barbara Smith were in a car parked near Chittyville, Illinois, (north of Herrin) on August 11, 1968. At 8:30 P.M. a giant figure suddenly appeared from the bushes, badly frightening the couple. They said it was ten feet tall, "with a head

as large as a steering wheel and a round, hairy face." It threw dirt at them through the window. Bullock returned to the spot the next day and found a large depression in the grass. People claimed that dogs in the area had been "carrying on" for the previous two weeks.

The editor of the Herrin, Illinois, Spokesman did not publish the story. He felt it was the work of some local practical jokers.

INDIANA

23. In 1962 a group of young people in a graveyard at Blue Clay Springs, Indiana, (near Richmond) reportedly saw a seven-foot-tall creature with red eyes. It stood on two feet but ran on all fours, ape-like, and was covered with white or silver hair. Footprints found showed four long front toes.

KENTUCKY

24. Trimble County, Kentucky, was plagued with "monster mania" in June 1962. A farmer named Owen Pike said he saw the thing when it attacked and mauled his dogs, one a Collie, the other a German shepherd. He described it as black, six feet tall, with hanging arms that reached to its knees. On June 8 Siles McKinney claimed the creature killed one of his calves. The calf's carcass was found fifteen feet outside of its enclosure and the gate was still shut. Claw marks were found around the barn and traces of black hair were also discovered. Examination of the calf indicated it had been killed by a blow on the head. Other animals in the area disappeared or were found mutilated.

Sheriff Curtis Clem took the matter very seriously. Seven police dogs, a helicopter, and a posse scoured the area. Large footprints

were found, like those of a giant dog. But various eyewitnesses attested that it was a large ape or bear. "A gorilla or a big something-or-other with reddish hair" was the general description.

J. Dan Webster, professor of zoology at Hanover, Indiana, said, "I suspect it was a Great Dane, of which there are several in the area."

Simultaneous with the Trimble County scare, citizens in Hazel, Kentucky, were out hunting for a snake twenty-eight feet long which had been seen there.

MICHIGAN

25. There is a swamp near Charlotte, Michigan, called "Gorilla Swamp" because several years ago people there reportedly saw a huge gorilla wandering around. At least, it walked on two feet and was covered with hair. Data is skimpy.

26. This is one of the shortest stories in the files of Loren Coleman. "In the year 1937, Saginaw, Michigan, a fisherman sitting on the banks of the Saginaw River is reputed to have seen a man-like monster climb up the river bank, lean upon a tree, and then return to the river. The man suffered a nervous breakdown."

27. Two young men, Otto Collins and Philip Williams, claimed that they ran into a giant, hair-covered, ape-like thing outside of Marshall, Michigan, in May 1956. According to their story, the creature picked them up, one under each arm, while their alarmed companion, Herman Williams, scrambled for his gun. The beast dropped them and "ambled off." They said that "it had big green eyes. They were as big as light bulbs." And it smelled "like something rotten."

28. Beginning around 1962 folks living in the vicinity of Sister Lakes, Michigan, started seeing something nine feet tall that made a whimpering sound. Then, in May 1964 "monster mania" hit the region full force. A man named Gordon Brown told how he and his brother had seen the creature one night and followed its tracks. "We come to a tree," Brown said. "Well, I knew there weren't no tree there before. Well, woweee! This thing was a-standing there. Well, we hightailed it right out of there."

Three teen-aged girls met the creature in broad daylight while walking along a side road in Silver Creek Township. Joyce Smith fainted on the spot. Patsy and Gail Clayton stood motionless, paralyzed with fear, as the thing charged off into the underbrush.

"It didn't look like a man," Joyce said. Patsy described it as being about seven feet tall with "a black face."

John Utrup told the Cass County sheriff that he had seen the monster several times. One night as he was driving into his yard he saw it standing behind a bush. "It had big, bright shining eyes," he said. Mrs. Utrup told of how one of her shepherd dogs chased the monster one night and came back with the pupil of one eye turned a pale blue color. Weeks later the eye returned to normal.

Many other witnesses came forward and were named in the extensive newspaper accounts. Hundreds of people flocked to Sister Lakes and the usual futile monster hunt took place. Local drive-ins did a big business selling "monster-burgers" and station WSJM had a sponsored program of new monster reports and special "monster music."

Professor Frank E. Eggelton of the University of Michigan Zoology Department announced that he thought the monster was a gorilla. Dr. William H. Burt, another zoologist at the university disagreed.

"It could be a black bear," Dr. Burt said. "The only trouble is they usually don't wander that far south in Michigan. Bears are

about three feet tall at adult height, standing on all fours. When they get up on their hind legs, which they occasionally do to look around, they might be five or six feet.

"If it's true that the 'monster' has been roaming around this area for two years, it certainly wouldn't be a gorilla since they couldn't survive that long in this climate out-of-doors," Burt concluded.

29. In August 1965 the monster returned to Michigan, this time to the placid little community of Monroe, due east of Sister Lakes in Cass County. We must add that this entire area is also one of the major UFO "windows" in the United States. The celebrated Michigan flying saucer sightings of March 1966 took place at Hillsdale, which lies directly between Monroe and Sister Lakes. There have been thousands of UFO sightings in this immediate area since 1896!

Sixteen people reportedly encountered the monster in June and July 1965. Things really got serious when two attacks occurred in a single week. On Wednesday, August 11, David Thomas was driving a group of women home from a neighborhood baby shower when the thing jumped in front of their car.

Thinking that it was a neighborhood prankster, Thomas got out of the car to take a swing at it. When he discovered that it towered above his six-foot frame he prudently decided to return to the car.

It struck him in the back, he said, throwing him against the auto. He leaped back into it and drove off as the hairy arms thumped on the roof and fenders. Other people in the immediate area saw the creature that same night. Keith Mercure said he fired his shotgun at it. Some witnesses described it as "smelling moldy." Most agreed that it was at least seven feet tall, hairy, and had very long arms. It "grunted and growled like a mad dog."

On Friday night, August 13, Mrs. Rose Owen and her daughter Christine Van Archer, said the monster ran alongside their car,

jumped on the side of it, reached through the open window, and grabbed Christine by the hair.

"We both screamed but the monster kept beating her head against the door until Christine fainted," Mrs. Owen said. "I jumped out of the car and ran to a house for help."

Christine had a black eye from that adventure, and her photo was widely published, even in Time magazine.

Another girl, Shirley Morrin, of Temperance, Michigan, said that the giant hairy thing jumped on her car, too, breaking her windshield and scratching her arm.

Once again armed posses combed the area in futile search. It had vanished.

All of these incidents were, coincidently, in the vicinity of the Enrico Fermi Atomic Power Plant. A few months later the plant was shut down temporarily because of mysterious sabotage.

MISSISSIPPI

30. Lost Gap, a heavily wooded area about five miles east of Meridian, Mississippi, was gripped with "monster mania" in 1962. It began when a group of teen-agers reported seeing a green-eyed monster six to nine feet tall. Soon there were dozens of other corroborating witnesses. Chief Deputy Alton Allen said he was convinced that the monster existed, and a huge search party was organized. Bloodhounds and a helicopter were brought into play but nothing was found. Nine years earlier, according to one story, railroad men working in the area where the monster was later seen found that their compasses would not work.

31. Two truckers, William and James Cagle, were headed for Marietta, Georgia, on the Tuesday night, November 8, 1966. As

they rounded a curve near Winona, Mississippi, a strange creature ran down a slope towards their vehicle.

"When my headlights picked him up, he was on our left side," James Cagle explained. "He was aggressive, angry, and ready to attack. . . . The face looked like a mixture of a gorilla and a human. The arms and legs were very large. The chest was at least three feet thick. His eyes glowed in the dark and did not seem to have pupils.

"It looked us over, then slowly raised an arm like the Indians do when they greet someone. I had seen all that I wanted. I floorboarded the accelerator and we moved out of there." [4]

Rumors were flying around Winona, Mississippi, in the fall of 1966. A seven-foot-tall monster with bright red eyes and covered with hair was allegedly on the prowl. One man claimed it had four-foot shoulders which tapered to a narrow waist. It was the size of a Kodiak bear, he said. Local rumors that the thing had been shot or captured proved groundless.

MISSOURI

32. In the late 1940s a cow-killing animal is supposed to have turned up in the "Nigger Wool Swamps" in southeast Missouri. It was said to rip apart full-grown cows and horses, abandoning the carcasses without eating them. Someone shot the animal, and the flimsy reports state that it looked "something like a gorilla." Unfortunately we know nothing more about this incident.

33. A bear-like animal stepped out of some woods in Kinloch, a suburb of St. Louis, Missouri, in July 1968 and grabbed a four-year-old child playing in a backyard. The child's aunt screamed and the family dog went after the animal. It dropped the child and

returned to the woods. The boy was later shown a model of a gorilla and he said the animal had resembled it. Police searched the woods and found no tracks, and no sign of the animal.

MONTANA

34. Harold E. Nelson was driving across country when he pulled his camper off the highway to settle down for the night outside of Billings, Montana, on Wednesday, September 11, 1968. As he was gulping down a can of beans he heard a noise outside the camper, so he picked up a flashlight to take a look. When he opened the door he found a huge thing staring straight at him.

"It had an ape-like face but it was definitely not a gorilla," Nelson said later. "The head was slightly pointed, sloping down like the sketches of cavemen. The whole body was covered with reddish-brown hair. There were a few spots of white hair along the edge of the enormous shoulders. It stood erect, like a man, and must have weighed six hundred to eight hundred pounds. He was big—real big."

After a long moment of total immobility, Nelson scrambled back into his camper to find his gun. The creature peered in the door curiously and then turned and shuffled off into the darkness.[5]

NEW JERSEY

35. Five students from the Spring Garden Institute at Philadelphia reportedly heard unearthly screams while camping near Lake Atsion in Burlington County, New Jersey, in 1960. "We were pretty much on edge," said Berle Schwed, "after finding four large tracks earlier in the underbrush near our camp. They were

about eleven inches long and they looked something like a large bird print with the heel dug in and the toes spread out."

36. On April 15, 1966, the Trenton, New Jersey, Evening Times carried a story asserting that a new wave of animal disappearances was taking place in Burlington County. Mr. Stanley Silcoch said he thought he had solved the mystery when he shot a raccoon on April 8. But his two dogs disappeared a short time later. A state trooper named Alfred Potter found a footprint "so large a man's hand could not cover it." Several months later an investigator denounced the whole affair as "a particularly vicious hoax."

37. Towards dusk on the evening of May 21, 1966, Raymond Todd and three friends were parked in an automobile in the Morristown National Historical Park, Morristown, New Jersey, when they saw a very tall ("at least seven-feet tall") entity ambling across the lawn. They described it as being faceless, covered with long black hair, and with scaly skin. What impressed them most was the breadth of the creature. It had huge shoulders, they said, and walked erect with a stiff, rocking movement. They were absolutely certain that it was not a bear or other known creature.

The quartet became hysterical and drove to the entrance of the park where they stopped cars and warned people that there was a "monster" on the loose. Todd stopped a car driven by a young lady (name withheld by request) and had her rush him to the Morristown Municipal Hall where he reported the encounter to the police. The police said that his fear and hysteria were genuine.

38. By a strange coincidence the young lady substantiated Todd's story with one of her own. She said that she and three others had seen a similar "monster" in the same area a year earlier. Her group had been parked in the dark when they heard a thumping on the

back of the car. They looked out the rear window and saw a huge form standing over the car. It was very tall and had very broad shoulders. They could not see its head. They drove away in a state of panic but did not report the episode to the authorities. The girl's mother urged her not to mention the incident to anyone.[6]

NEW YORK

39. Letter from a young man in Sherman, New York: I am writing because about three or four years ago, [circa, 1965–66] I saw a white monster in a swamp beside our house. I have been seeing these things ever since then and close to our house. One night it came down in our yard. It stands between twelve and eighteen feet high, it has a long tail between six and eight feet long. It is all covered with hair. They are always white. I have seen them alone or two at a time. It can walk on two feet or four feet. It is almost a double for a Prehistoric Sloth. My whole family has seen this thing and I know of two more men who have seen them . . . I am fifteen years old and I am not kidding. I have seen these things and they are real.

40. Hearsay reports of a giant hairy humanoid blundering about in the woods near Ithaca during a major UFO "flap" in the area in the fall of 1967. One story claims that a group of teen-aged UFO buffs searching the woods encountered the creature and that it tore a boy's jacket.

OHIO

41. On March 28, 1959, three teen-agers, Michael Lane, Wayne Armstrong, and Denny Patterson, were badly frightened by

something near the Charles Mill Reservoir outside Mansfield, Ohio. They said a giant seven-foot-tall being seemed to rise up off the ground in front of them. It had glowing green eyes and no arms were visible. Strange tracks were later found at the site.

42. In 1963 the "thing" paid another visit to Mansfield. Many witnesses reported seeing a creature seven to eight feet tall covered with gray hairs and having large, luminous eyes. "It was definitely not a bear," said C. W. Cox. "It was more like a gorilla."

The usual fruitless search was held.

43. A "monster man" has reportedly been living quietly in a tunnel in Cleveland, Ohio's Riverside cemetery for the past twenty-five years. One of the people who claims to have seen it, Mrs. Grace Lewis, describes him as "a big hairy man weighing four hundred pounds." According to local theorists, the "monster man" was obliged to move when a highway construction demolished his haven. For his new home he picked a very logical place . . . a woods directly behind the Cleveland Zoo.

On Monday night, April 22, 1968, a couple of youths came face to face with something weird in those woods.

"It's eight feet tall and covered with hair," William Schwark said later. "I chased it Monday and it knocked me down a slope."

Another boy claimed the thing grabbed him, ripped his jacket, and left deep scratches in his shoulder.

The word got out quickly, and within a few days the woods were filled with teen-agers armed with flashlights, baseball bats, and ropes. A white sheet with burn marks in it, and some chicken feathers were discovered in the area, but, as usual, the hairy Unbelievable eluded his pursuers and disappeared without a trace. Local police remained skeptical of the whole affair.[7]

OREGON

44. Twenty-eight people in and around Yankton, Oregon, reportedly saw tall, hairy humanoids in 1926. One ran alongside a moving truck, looking into the cab. Sheep and children are supposed to have disappeared mysteriously in the area that year.

45. In the summer of 1942 Mr. Don Hunter, head of the Audio Visual Department of the University of Oregon, and his wife were vacationing at Todd Lake, Oregon. One afternoon they were sitting in their car, waiting for a rainstorm to pass over, when they suddenly saw an unusually tall figure striding across a meadow about a quarter of a mile from the lake. "It was not humped over but very erect, with a military bearing." Hunter said later. "The legs seemed very long. He did not run, he walked. Giant strides very quickly . . . In getting out of the car we must have been heard because it took off for the trees with giant strides."

46. In the fall of 1957 Gary Joanis and Jim Newall reportedly saw a giant human-like figure while hunting near Wanoga Butter, Oregon. Mr. Joanis had just shot a deer and the tall being came out of the bushes suddenly, picked the dead animal up with one arm, and walked off quickly with tremendous strides. The creature was "not less than nine feet tall" with very long hair on its arms. It made a noise like "a very strange whistling scream."

47. Two boys from Rosenburg. Oregon, told state police that they had seen a fourteen-foot man-like creature in a nearby woods on Wednesday, July 29, 1959. They said it was covered with hair, walked upright, and had human characteristics. They saw it first on the previous Friday but did not tell their parents because "we didn't think anyone would believe us." They returned to the spot again,

armed with a rifle. The monster reappeared and one of the boys fired five shots at it from a range of about fifty yards.

"It ran off screaming like a cat, but louder," he said.

Police found human-like tracks fourteen inches long showing five toes. The boys were certain it was not a bear.

48. Did you hear the one about the walking tree stumps? The Spokane, Washington Spokesman-Review carried this on November 18, 1966:

> Newport, Ore. (AP) People in this coastal logging area didn't believe sixteen-year-old Kathy Reeves when she told them about "the three little stumps that walked across the pasture."
>
> Not only did they move, said Kathy, but they also were of different colors—orange, light blue, white, yellow, and watermelon-colored.
>
> That was six months ago.
>
> Since then, twenty-five persons have seen the unidentified flying objects and fifteen statements were taped by newsmen . . .

Later the Reeves home on Pioneer Mountain was haunted by strange balls of light which flitted from room to room. Investigating police officers and reporters also saw the lights. The family finally moved out.

Several others in the same area told police they had been seeing giant humanoid figures with a single eye in the middle of their foreheads.

PENNSYLVANIA

49. In a letter to the editor in REAL magazine (August 1967), Mr. Mario W. Pinardi claimed that he and another person saw and tracked a nine-foot-tall, gorilla-like creature in an open field near Allison, Pennsylvania.

50. A six-foot-tall "person or thing" was seen by seven persons on the shore of Edinboro Lake, Edinboro, Pennsylvania, Wednesday night, August 17, 1966. "The witnesses fired at the figure on two occasions with weapons they had taken along . . . Apparently the creature was not hit," said the Erie, Pennsylvania Times (August 19, 1966). A heavy UFO "flap" was taking place in the area at the time. Another tall unidentified creature had been seen on Presque Isle, July 31, some eighteen miles from Edinboro. One report claimed that a man had come face to face with the Edinboro monster near the lake and had been so badly frightened that he was unable to speak for three days. Hoarseness and loss of voice has occurred in a number of close UFO sightings in recent years.

TENNESSEE

51. A "Wild Man of the Woods" was allegedly captured in Tennessee in 1878 and placed on exhibition in Louisville, Kentucky. He was described as being six feet five inches tall, with eyes twice normal size. His body was "covered with fish scales." [8]

52. Two Clapps Chapel Road residents outside of Knoxville, Tennessee, fired a shotgun at an apparition eight to ten feet tall on September 24, 1959. The creature had come up to the window on the front porch of Earl Taylor's house. John Rosenbaum joined Taylor in fighting "It" off. They heard thumps on Taylor's car and

later found two long scratches on the hood which had not been there when he polished the car earlier in the day. The creature disappeared without a trace.

53. Brenda Ann Adkins reported meeting a hairy creature on Monteagle Mountain, north of Chattanooga, Tennessee, in the spring of 1968. She had stopped near the edge of a cliff to take some pictures when she became aware of a nauseating odor and heard a noise in the woods behind her. Turning, she saw the thing lumbering towards her.

"I was absolutely frozen with fear," she said. "This thing was at least seven feet tall and must have weighed several hundred pounds. I'll never forget his enormous chest and those huge arms and legs. His body was completely covered with blackish-red hair. The face was a mixture of an ape and a human. I still have nightmares about that afternoon. He seemed to be angry and was growling. I thought he would push me off the cliff or something. Then, he stopped about six feet from where I stood, cocked his head in a quizzical way, and just stared at me. He studied me for a few moments, then seemed to smile, made a little blubbering noise, and walked back into the brush." [9]

TEXAS

54. Lake Worth is the major reservoir for Fort Worth, Texas. A hairy monster lives there. Back in 1967 something described as "a Satyr-like ogre" was scaring folks around Mosque Point at the lake. A band of teen-agers searched the area but never even caught a glimpse of it.

"Greer Island is where about a dozen people say they recently saw a monster," the Fort Worth Star-Telegram reported on July 12,

1969. "Descriptions of the monster have ranged from a half-man, half-goat thing with fur and scales to a seven-foot, three-hundred-pound hairy, hoary being that throws auto tires five hundred feet."

The first 1969 report came on Wednesday night, July 9, 1969, when three couples told police that the creature had pounced on their car and left scratch marks on the hood. Another motorist said he saw a "big and hairy" thing which emitted a "squall" and then tossed a tire and rim more than five hundred feet.

A local "naturalist" suggested that the culprit might have been a playful bobcat. Sheriff Lon Evans was less concerned with bobcats and monsters than he was with the hordes of trigger-happy motorists who began patrolling the lake with loaded weapons. The seven-foot, three hundred-pound half-man, half-goat was seen throughout 1969.

WASHINGTON

55. "Reports of a tall, hairy man bouncing across Highway 112 recently have stirred up the West End of Clallam County," the Port Angeles, Washington, Evening News announced on July 3, 1964. "It was reported that an Air Force man from Neah Bay was driving between Neah Bay and Sekiu and saw the 'tall, hairy man cross the highway in three bounds.'

"Footprints were reportedly found in the area. The serviceman is also reported to be a teetotaller."

56. A lady in the area, Mrs. George Wright, wrote to tell us that she and her husband had come across some giant footprints on a logging road the day after Thanksgiving 1964. Interestingly, Mrs. Wright reported, "There was only one print, almost directly in the center of the twelve-foot stretch of soft mud and my own

footprints—no others."

She continued, "The sighting of Bob Harrison was a year or two earlier, during hunting season, when they were all out to their cabin on forest land at Pysht. He was hunting when he and the 'creature' both looked over some bushes and into each other's faces. When asked why he didn't shoot, he said it looked too human. Later on his story changed to where it could have been a bear with a very scarred up face. They backed away from each other and took off in different directions."

57. Late Monday evening, September 19, 1966, Ken Pettijohn was driving home outside of Yakima, Washington, when he rounded a bend and came upon a huge man covered with silvery white hair standing in the middle of the road. There was a drizzling rain. Pettijohn slammed on his brakes and his engine stalled. The creature raised an arm as if to shield its face from the bright headlights. While Pettijohn frantically tried to start his engine the tall figure walked around to the back of the car. The engine finally turned over, and Pettijohn could see the figure in his rearview mirror as he drove off, silhouetted by the lightning.

58. At 4:00 A.M., on Wednesday, March 5, 1969, Don Cox drove around a bend on Highway 14 near Beacon Rock State Park in Skamania County, Washington, when a monstrous creature appeared on the road in front of his headlights. It was, he said, eight to ten feet tall, with a "face like an ape."

"It ran like a man and was covered with fuzzy fur," Cox stated. "I had just come out of a fog bank that had caused me to slow my car when I first saw what I thought to be a tree leaning toward the middle of the road.

"I slowed my car further and turned my headlights to high beam and it was then that I saw this fur-covered human form with the

face of an ape. He ran across the road in front of the car, leaped up a forty degree slope and disappeared in the woods."

Deputy John Mason investigated and found smears which indicated that the creature had made an eight-foot jump up the embankment . . . a feat beyond the capabilities of any bear.

In April 1969 the Skamania County Board of Commissioners passed an ordinance making it illegal to kill a Sasquatch, providing a ten-thousand-dollar fine and up to five years imprisonment. [10]

59. At 2:30 A.M., Sunday, July 27, 1969, Deputy Floyd Sund was driving along a deserted wooded road north of Hoquiam, Washington, when he had to slam on his brakes to avoid colliding with an animal standing directly in front of him. He got out of his car and pointed his spotlight at the animal. It was, he said, eight feet tall, with a human-like face, but was covered with hair except for the feet and the hands. He estimated that it must have weighed about three hundred pounds. Somewhat dismayed he drew his pistol but the animal ran off into the woods.

Police searched the area for footprints the next morning but it was "too gravelly." Sheriff Pat Gallagher said he thought it could have been a bear. Deputy Sund grumbled, "It sure didn't look like one."

A former Hoquiam resident now living in Seattle, Mr. Richard Floyd, declared, "There is a serious possibility here of police brutality . . . This blatant intimidation of what appears to be a visitor from our neighbor to the north must stop." Mr. Floyd announced plans to form a protective organization to be called Don't Upset Poor, Excitable Sasquatches—DUPES, for short.

WEST VIRGINIA

60. In the summer of 1960, a group of young men were camping

in the woods near Davis, West Virginia. One night one of them was cutting wood for the fire when he heard a noise and felt someone poking him in the ribs. He thought one of his friends was trying to scare him and turned around, annoyed, to find himself confronted with a "horrible monster." He described it: "It had two huge eyes that shone like big balls of fire and we had no light at all. It stood every bit of eight feet tall and had shaggy long hair all over its body. It just stood and stared at us. Its eyes were very far apart."

By the time the boys had recovered from their shock the creature had shuffled off into the darkness. They broke camp early the next morning. Gigantic footprints were found where the creature had been but the witnesses didn't feel like following them.[11]

61. A West Virginian named W. C. "Doc" Priestley claimed that a hairy humanoid ruined the electrical system of his automobile in 1960. That summer numerous people around Parson, West Virginia, allegedly saw a gruesome eight-foot-tall thing covered with shaggy hair and equipped with two huge eyes which "shone like big balls of fire." In October 1960 Priestley was driving through the Monongahela National Forest about three miles north of Marlington, West Virginia, when his car, which had been "purring like a kitten," suddenly sputtered and stopped.

"Then I saw it," Priestley later told reporters of the Charleston, West Virginia, Daily Mail (January 5, 1961). "To my left beside the road stood this monster with long hair pointing straight up toward the sky."

A group of Priestley's friends were driving on ahead in a bus. When they noticed that he was no longer directly behind them, they turned around and drove back to look for him.

"I don't know how long I sat there," Priestley continued, "until the boys missed me and backed the bus back to where I was. It

seemed this monster was very much afraid of the bus and dropped his hair (which had been standing on end) and to my surprise as soon as he did this, my car started to run again. I didn't tell the boys what I had seen. The thing took off when the bus stopped."

Priestley again started to follow along behind the bus and then his car started to act up a second time. "I could see the sparks flying from under the hood of my car as if it had a very bad short," he noted. "And sure enough, there beside the road stood the monster again. The points were completely burned out of my car."

The bus backed up again and as soon as it appeared the monster melted into the forest.

62. At 11:00 P.M., Friday, December 30, 1960, when, as he rounded a curve on a lonely, backwoods road near Hickory Flats, West Virginia—between Braxton and Webster Counties—Charles Stover came upon a "monster, standing erect, with hair all over its body." Stover said that he almost hit the thing and stopped his bakery truck a short distance away to look back. The hairy, six-foot-tall, man-shaped figure stood beside the road watching him. He stepped on the gas and finally stopped at a restaurant-filling station where he told his story to a group of men. They immediately armed themselves and went to the spot. They found strange marks on the ground and that large rocks had been overturned by something. Scattered residents in the area said they had been hearing unusual cries in the woods for several weeks.

The Stover story is another "classic" in monster lore.

WISCONSIN

63. A large, powerfully built "man" covered with hair was seen by three men in the Deltox Marsh in Wisconsin on October 17,

1968. The same men, together with nine others, encountered it again on November 30. On the first occasion they tried to follow it but it eluded them in the thick underbrush. On November 30 the twelve men were combing the swamp looking for it. They found it but didn't shoot because "it was too man-like." Again it got away.[12]

BURMA

64. Our favorite wire service, Reuters, reported the following datelined June 12, 1969, Rangoon, Burma:

> Two giant "monkey men" recently sighted roaming the jungles along the Mekong River near the Thai-Burma-Laos border have been terrifying local villagers. According to press reports, the two creatures are said to be about ten feet tall. The "monkey men" were first sighted by a group of hunters led by a local preacher in the Taimilek area. However, the hunters were so frightened by the creatures that they fled without firing a shot. A few days later a farmer reported seeing the two creatures by moonlight in his fields. He said they made sounds like those of a child crying. A Rangoon daily newspaper, The Light of Burma, said a third sighting was made by a group of Lahu guerrillas. The guerrillas had run for their lives after one of the creatures hurled a rock at them. The newspaper gave no dates on when the sightings were made but said the creatures had "khaki" colored hair on their bodies.

CANADA

65. Commercial artist John Osborne was sitting on a dike at the foot of No. 3 Road in Richmond, British Columbia, on Thursday July 21, 1966, when a large creature appeared on the edge of a nearby woods.

"It wasn't ape-like," Osborne said. "It was like a big hairy man, about six feet eight to seven feet tall."

He watched it for ten or fifteen seconds then it walked behind a tree and disappeared. He looked the spot over but could find no footprints.

A week earlier Don Gilmore reported seeing "a big woolly animal" stampede about a hundred head of cattle on No. 8 Road in Richmond. Osborne drew a sketch of his hairy man, and it was published in the Vancouver, British Columbia, Sun (July 22, 1966).

66. In the fall of 1966 two engineers engaged in a geological survey between Vancouver and Chilliwack, British Columbia, came upon a small lake about two hundred yards across. They were amazed to see "an ape" standing on the other side of the lake, looking at them. They watched the animal for half an hour, and finally decided to leave the area as quickly as possible. Later they returned and found footprints in the snow which they photographed.

67. From the Powell-River News, British Columbia (February 29, 1968):

> Alert Bay fishermen Tom Brown and Harry Whonnock were digging clams on the south shore of Broughton Island, about twenty-five miles N.E. of Alert Bay, and only a short swim from the mainland, when, they say, they encountered the hairy monster.
>
> "There was still plenty of light to see that it was not an animal," Brown said. "It was hairy, about six feet tall, and

was looking at us. That's about all we saw of it. Harry and I ran as fast as we could for the boat and the Sasquatch headed into the bush. I don't know how the Sasquatch took it, but all we wanted to do was get away."

68. A logger in British Columbia, Gordon Baum, reported seeing a hair-covered man-like animal leap over a four-foot pile of logs at Salmon Arm Inlet on Thursday, June 27, 1968. "It must have been a Sasquatch," Baum was quoted as saying in the Vancouver Province. "It moved on two legs like a man; it ran like a man but no man can move that fast. He was gone in two seconds. He was about five feet tall, very stocky, and heavily built."

69. Undated clipping from the Mid-Day Standard, England (August 1969):

GIANT STRIDES OVER RAVINE

Rocky Mountain House, Alberta, Saturday. Three workmen at the Big Horn dam site claim they have seen a humanoid figure almost three times the size of an average man.

Two of the men said they saw the figure, about fifteen feet tall, striding across a ravine. The third saw it watching the site from a hill.

Indians believe there is a family of four of the creatures living in the area.

SOUTH AMERICA

70. Between 1952–65 there were eighteen documented cases of people in Argentina, Venezuela, and Brazil being attacked and

injured by unidentified hairy creatures in human form. Some of these cases have been widely commented on in UFO literature.

In 1964 a truck driver named Alberto Kalbermatter was driving along a deserted road outside of Resistenca, Argentina, late at night when a nine-foot-tall creature suddenly stepped in front of him and uttered a loud, terrifying cry. He said it had long black hair and a human-like face. He stepped on the gas, nearly running over the creature as he fled.

A strange luminous object had been sighted in the trees at the very same spot a few days earlier, according to the local police. They said that Kalbermatter was an extremely frightened man when he reported his "monster" to them.

SPAIN

71. In Spain, the Vilovi district near Barcelona, suffered an onslaught of Unbelievables in February 1968. The original reports were made by frightened children but soon many adults had also seen a giant hairy creature. According to the newspaper Arriba (February 27, 1968), "The animal was drinking from a pond near the house of the witnesses. It fled, leaving in the clay soil a number of great footprints forty centimetres long and resembling those of a plantigrade being (i.e., one that walks on the whole sole of the foot). These footprints agree with description given by the motorist Ruperto Juher, who said that he had seen, near Hostalrich a few days ago, an animal with a large hairy body and long arms, that crossed the highway in front of him, walking with a weary sort of gait."

No gorillas or bears were missing from any zoos or circuses, the newspaper reported. A major panic mounted in the region and massive searches were held, with the usual negative results.

A number of interesting comparisons can be drawn from the foregoing. Viewed cumulatively these random sightings reveal several hitherto hidden aspects. We can now categorize these events and speculate that there are two main groups. Group 1 consists of real animals possessing common characteristics of appearance and behavior. Group 2 are "monsters" in the true sense of the word and seem to be part of a paranormal phenomenon, like ghosts and flying saucers. That is, they are a problem for parapsychologists rather than biologists. They are "something else."

In Table 10.1 we have organized these sightings by years, from 1956 to 1969. Actually, our pre-1960 data is scanty since the subject was not too well-known or publicized until Ivan T. Sanderson published his article, "The Strange Story of America's Abominable Snowman," in True magazine (December 1959). Before that, the subject was almost entirely in the hands of the very small group of enthusiasts who collected "Forteana," and flying saucer buffs who pounced upon every oddity that appeared in the press. Almost single-handedly, Sanderson brought these events to the public attention and created broader interest. Before 1960 only those very few events which created major "scares" or received wire service attention were preserved by the tiny monster buffery. Thus we have only a total of eight reports between 1956 and 1959, and fifty-two reports from the ten years which followed.

Until 1966 there was no organized effort to keep close tabs on flying saucer sightings and professional researchers were forced to rely upon the superficial, often erroneous tables and statistics compiled by the United States Air Force. There was a great surge of UFO activity in the early 1960s, and 1962 was a "flap" year. That year produced five "monster" sightings for our table. There was another massive UFO surge in 1965 and an almost overwhelming wave in 1966. These "flaps" attracted more people to the UFO

coterie and reporting improved greatly. So the year 1966 produced fourteen "monster" cases. (There were really many more than that. We have detailed some of the others in the general text.) Flying saucer sightings remained high in 1967–69, although the new events received little or no publicity. The United States Air Force received only 38 UFO reports in March 1968, compared with 165 in March 1967 and 158 in March 1966. It has been reliably estimated that fewer than two percent of all UFO sightings are reported to the Air Force at all. So even if the statistics were accurate, which they're not, they would not fully represent the overall situation.

Witnesses to "monsters" very rarely report to the local newspapers or police, and never to the Air Force. In our travels around the country we have uncovered many spectacular cases which had never received any publicity of any kind. Often, when the witness tells his family and friends about the incident he is so heavily ridiculed that he shuts up. In most cases, the man or woman who does report to the police or newspaper is not taken seriously. We have to keep repeating this vital point throughout this book. If you encountered a ten-foot-tall creature covered with moss and slime, with two huge, luminous red eyes, who would you tell? And do you think anyone would take you seriously?

TABLE 10.1

Creature Sighting by Years
Not Including Those Detailed in the Main Text

Year	Totals
1956	2
1957	1
1958	2
1959	3

1960	5
1961	0
1962	5
1963	3
1964	3
1965	4
1966	14
1967	5
1968	8
1969	5
Total number of cases	60

These events are being taken more seriously now by larger numbers of people. Our channels for communicating these experiences have improved greatly. The handful of well-equipped researchers involved now have more and better data to work from, and we are finally getting very close to a solution to all these mysteries.

One of the most disturbing factors in the "monster" cases is the high ratio of hostile events in which human beings and animals have been deliberately attacked. Similar hostility is apparent in many UFO reports, but these hostile aspects are played down or suppressed by the UFO coterie which prefers to believe that flying saucers are benevolent. In Table 10.2 we summarize the forms of hostility encountered. It is significant that automobiles were concerned in sixteen of these cases or approximately twenty-five percent of the total. This ratio is even higher in the UFO reports.

TABLE 10.2

Hostility: Attacks on Humans, Animals, and Automobiles

Nature of Hostility	Totals

Automobiles approached and/or attacked	16
Autos damaged by claws, etc	4
Human beings attacked and injured	8
Animals attacked, injured, killed or mutilated	
Animal disappearances	6
Tires thrown at witnesses	2
Total number of hostile acts	36

A great many of our "monster" sightings occur in Lovers' Lanes, when the creatures suddenly shuffle out of the bushes and terrify young people. A majority of our low-level UFO sightings also take place under similar conditions. There is a built-in silencing factor in these cases, since, very often, the young lovers are not supposed to be there in the first place, or they are adults cheating on their mates. They cannot reveal their sighting without exposing their indiscretion. This is the main reason why so many of those witnesses who do report their sightings insist on total anonymity.

One of the most puzzling aspects of the monsters' behavior is their penchant for chasing moving automobiles and attempting to reach and harm the drivers. Neither bears nor gorillas would behave in this fashion. This auto-chasing, repeated in so many cases, is an unintelligent act. Yet, in many of the other cases the creatures seem to display high intelligence—almost human-like intelligence. There is obviously a very great difference between the intelligent "Big Foot" of the West Coast and the auto-chasing Abominable Swamp Slobs of Michigan and Florida. A close study of these cases indicates that the creatures—or apparitions—which openly pursue vehicles are paranormal entities rather than real animals. The ABSM may occasionally blunder into the path of a car in a forest in Washington, but his reaction is usually one of curiosity, not hostility.

It almost seems as if these paranormal types are being used to frighten people away from specific areas, or, conversely, to attract hordes of people to those areas. We have found in a number of instances that, while mobs of monster-chasers were combing one forest or swamp, UFOs were engaged in covert activities only a few miles away. They went almost completely unnoticed because everyone in the area was off in the other direction. So we can offer one tentative conclusion: the "monsters" are engaged in what magicians call misdirection. While you watch the waving right hand, the left hand is doing the dirty work unnoticed. While everyone is out beating the bushes around a Lovers' Lane, cattle are disappearing a few miles away.

Automobiles frequently stall suddenly when UFOs are present, so we are particularly intrigued by Cases 57 and 61 in which this electro-magnetic (EM) effect may have occurred.

Water plays a very important role in UFO activity, and a majority of our monster sightings have taken place around lakes, rivers, and swamps. It is, of course, natural for animals to be attracted to water. If the ABSM is an intelligent, human-like animal, perhaps civilization has been driving him deeper and deeper into isolated forests, national parks, and swamps. The puzzle here is that in recent years the creatures seem to be moving closer to civilization rather than further away from it. They are coming down from the northwest to parade around California.

From these reports and the other cases described in the general text, we can draw a fairly complete picture of some of these animals. In Table 10.3 we have isolated the general descriptive data. In no less than forty-four of our sample cases the witnesses were certain that the creatures were taller than a good size man. The usual estimate ranged between seven and ten feet tall. Only a few of the United States cases described the creatures as being less than six feet tall. Many witnesses also commented on the fact that

the animal seemed to be very broad—much broader than a man. Four-foot-wide shoulders have been described. This broadness is a common factor and rules out bears and gorillas.

TABLE 10.3

General Descriptions in Reports

Descriptions	Total
Hairy humanoids taller than an average man (usually from 7 to 10 feet tall)	44
Hairy humanoids from 3 to 6 feet tall	4
Broad shoulders; broader than a man's	5
Unusually long arms	4
No visible arms	1
"Bull dog" head	1
"Bear with scarred face"	1
Face like a cross between a gorilla and a human	2
Human-like face	2
"Protuberant mouth"	1
Beard	1
Eyes	
a. Luminous eyes	4
b. Green eyes	4
c. Red eyes	3
Round face	2
Ears	
a. Short ears	1
b. pointed ears	1
c. earless	1
Scaly skin	2
Greenish or greenish-glowing	2

With a few notable exceptions, the witnesses most often described the creatures' faces as being either "human-like" or a cross between a human and a gorilla or ape. The "protuberant mouth" in Case 4 may indicate a paranormal entity, as do the luminous eyes in eleven of the cases. Some animal eyes are highly reflective, of course, and seem to glow when a headlight or flashlight strikes them. But many witnesses claim that the creatures' eyes were self-luminous and very bright—brighter than a reflection. There are very few ABSM reports which mention luminous or self-luminous eyes. On the other hand, luminous eyes are a characteristic in many of the UFO "occupant" reports.

In Case 11 the witness said that the creature seemed to be more "mechanical" than alive. It moved stiffly and methodically, ignoring the dogs snapping at its heels. Our Sasquatch would certainly have reacted differently.[13] In forthcoming chapters we will outline several other cases in which the creatures appeared to be robots rather than living entities.

Throughout this book you will find incidents in which the witnesses described hearing a sound "like a woman screaming" or a "baby crying." The phenomenon is well known to ghost hunters, and there are many cases in which the sounds were heard in cemeteries and "haunted" houses all over the world. The "woman screaming" sound is definitely related to our monsters. This can be reproduced mechanically. For years, phony mediums used to reproduce this sound in seances by stroking a warm silver dollar over a piece of dry ice. It creates a shrill, unearthly scream. We have pulled this trick on a number of monster witnesses and they reacted with alarm and recognition, saying that it was almost exactly what they had heard during their experience.

Here in Table 10.4 we run down some of the general characteristics reported in the monster events.

There is only one case (23) in which the creature dropped from an erect position and ran off on all fours like a bear. Other aspects of that report take it out of the ABSM category. In Cases 20 and 54, we have a couple of oddballs: One described as a "half-man, half-horse" (a Centaur?), the other as "half-man, half-goat" (the classic Satyr?). These could have been merely subjective impressions, or perhaps the reporter writing the story either misinterpreted the witnesses' descriptions or added a few embellishments of his own. (In a 1957 "little man" case in New Jersey a local reporter touched up the story by saying that the creature was wearing a jaunty tam o' shanter. This detail has duly been bandied about in the UFO literature ever since.)

TABLE 10.4

General Characteristics of Creatures Sighted

Characteristics	Total
Sounds	
a. Like a woman screaming	6
b. Whistling scream	1
c. Child crying	1
d. Gurgling and/or blubbering	2
Displayed extraordinary agility; made great leaps	5
Dropped from erect position to all fours	1
Appearance accompanied by an unpleasant odor	5

Five of our sample cases mention a pungent, nasty odor similar to the smell described in so many of the Asian accounts.

The Group 1 type is, as we said, an animal—or even several different kinds of animals—still unknown to science. It is hostile only when threatened or attacked. It seems to be intelligent;

perhaps it even has a high order of intelligence—as high, say, as that of the dolphin. This intelligence had made it almost as elusive and cunning as man himself. The footprints and other physical evidence accumulated over the years lend further credence to the eye-witness testimony. This creature exists. But he does not want anything to do with man. And who can blame him?

Group 2 comprise the real mystery. They appear and disappear suddenly, as if they never existed at all. They rarely leave footprints or other physical evidence behind. They seem to be more in the nature of paranormal or paraphysical apparitions. They attack people and automobiles, causing scratches, bruises, and black eyes. They chase cars and carry off cattle. They scream like banshees (maybe they are the original banshees of folklore), and despite their great height, weight, and girth, they melt into nothingness when the posses turn out. Since our data is admittedly only a fragment of all the sightings, we cannot guess at how long this has been going on, or what the real scope of the phenomenon is.

Worst of all, there is the stomach-wrenching possibility that we only hear about the people who got away!

ELEVEN

Those Silly "Flying Saucer" People

HAIR COVERED giants and midgets in human form ride around in flying saucers. There are now over two thousand documented reports of UFOs landing and picking up or discharging passengers. The descriptions of those passengers vary wildly and include transparent entities (even with their bones showing!), weird glowing gentlemen with one solitary eye smack in the middle of their forehead, kindly Venusians with long flowing blond hair, and diminutive fairy-like people only a few inches in height. Since so many of these descriptions are so ridiculous, they rarely receive much publicity, and only a very small handful of patient researchers have made any effort to gather all of these disparate reports together.

Children often make the best witnesses, and many of the UFO landings are best represented by the reports of children. But police officers, doctors, lawyers, pilots, and other "reliable" types have also reported encounters with the mysterious flying saucer people —if they are people in the real sense of the word.

Although the UFO coterie has generated a mountain of literature

(the UFO bibliography published by the Library of Congress in 1969 listed more than 1,600 UFO books and articles), there are very few objective and meaningful studies of these landing cases. You can count on one hand the few qualified researchers who have attempted to sort out the UFO mess. They include Aimé Michel and Dr. Jacques Vallee of France, Gordon Creighton and Charles Bowen of England, and Coral Lorenzen and Ivan T. Sanderson in the United States. Others, such as Isabel Davis, a mainstay in the Washington, D.C. office of the National Investigation Committees on Aerial Phenomena (NICAP), have quietly kept track of these "humanoid" reports for years. Ironically, NI-CAP's official policy has been to downgrade, ridicule, and reject nearly all UFO landing cases, devoting their main efforts to a twelve-year campaign to prove the reliability of UFO witnesses. For some peculiar reason a majority of all UFO buffs have long neglected the overwhelming mass of landing reports, perhaps because many of these reports seem to refute the popular belief that flying saucers are the product of a marvelously advanced technology from a super-civilization in the sky. Actually, when you carefully interview the landing witnesses in depth, as we have done in many cases, it seems as if flying saucers are really a subjective phenomenon which is merely part of the broader world of psychic phenomena. The UFO entities, in most cases, behave like idiots, animals, or brainless robots of some kind. Many witnesses have commented on their bewildering impression that the saucers, themselves, were somehow "alive" and that the entities merely seemed to be an extension of that life form.

That ace monster sleuth, Ivan T. Sanderson, commented in his wry British way on the UFO coterie's reluctance to accept the landing reports in his book Uninvited Visitors:

> Just imagine what would happen on some other

> planetary body if one of our space probes was manned by (1) a middle-aged Bushman woman, (2) a six-foot-six-inch Nigerian from somewhere around Katsena, with his near black skin color and his flowing white robes and turban, (3) a blond, buxom, Swedish girl, (4) a blue-black-skinned Melanesian with a full mop of branching red hair, (5) a Japanese child, and (6) a Neapolitan man, with shiny, black, wavy hair and ivory skin. I can imagine the inhabitants of such a planet, if intelligent at all, going into near hysterics and their authorities immediately locking up any who said they had encountered such a coterie coming out of a space vehicle and collecting plants and domestic animals. The situation would become more confounded if only one or two of these six types happened to be seen manning a space-traveling vehicle. And, if only one of the types was seen at a time in various places and by different people, the debate among the witnesses as to which was telling the truth and which imagining things could well lead to bloodshed. This is just about the situation in which we (terrestrial man) are today. So let us try to be a bit more logical.

Logic has, alas, played a very small role in the infant pseudoscience of UFOlogy. Speculation and blind belief have been the orders of the day. An astronomer observes a flash of light on Mars lending "proof that flying saucers come from Mars. A radio astronomer announces that he has picked up a wave of static coming from some distant point in space, and immediately the UFOlogists tell us that some great cosmic civilization is beaming messages at us. But when a flying saucer lands on a highway twenty miles outside of Washington, D.C., and a human-looking

man in coveralls dismounts to chat with a passing motorist, the UFOlogists all look the other way. It could not be. Yet there have been scores of such highway landings in recent years—most of them ignored.

If the UFO buffs prefer gruesome nonhuman BEMs (bugeyed monsters), we have many cases of those, too. Here is an INS dispatch which was widely published in 1954:

> Garson, Ontario, July 7 (INS). A young Canadian miner is insisting he saw a flying saucer and its crew of three—"all thirteen feet tall with ears like spurs and three sets of arms."
>
> Ennio La Sarza, twenty-five, told his story yesterday to Royal Canadian Airforce authorities. The RCAF started an investigation but refused to comment.
>
> La Sarza claimed he saw "a huge disk" descend from the sky north of the nickle mining center of Garson last Friday—the day on which the planet Mars was nearest to the earth's orbit.
>
> La Sarza said he asked the creatures, from a distance, who they were and they "fixed me with a hypnotic stare until I fainted; when I came to they and the ship had vanished."

The year 1954 produced a worldwide UFO "flap," with heavy concentrations of landings in France, Italy, and South America. Dr. Jacques Vallee collected two hundred of the 1954 reports and studied them very systematically. In eight of these cases the witnesses had claimed that the UFO occupants were "little men" or giants, wholly or partially covered with hair. In many instances the witnesses claimed they suffered paralysis or "fainting spells" in the presence of the entities. Yet, incredibly, the numerous physical

(medical) effects of UFOs upon human beings have never been properly studied, even though there are now thousands of such cases.

Dr. Vallee's book Passport to Magonia sums up hundreds of landing cases covering the past hundred years. Yes, this sort of thing has been going on, largely unnoticed, for a very long time, perhaps throughout history.

There were worldwide UFO "flaps" in 1896–97, 1905, and 1909. One of the many odd UFO habits came to light in those early cases. The UFO's were fond of scattering ordinary debris in their wake, tossing newspapers, shoes, and even peeled potatoes overboard as they cruised about our then-virgin skies. Rumors and stories of "secret inventors" were widely circulated. Even today UFOs often leave perfectly ordinary rubbish in their path, particularly after landing. This appears to be a simple psychological warfare gimmick. The discovery of mundane materials at a landing site usually leads investigators to conclude that the witnesses were wrong or were lying. After all, the Martians and Venusians are not likely to spill pieces of ordinary aluminum, sparkplugs of known manufacture, and pristine newspapers around the countryside.

At 11:00 P.M. on the night of May 18, 1909, a man named Lethbridge was strolling along a road in Caerphilly, Wales, when he came upon a large cylindrical object. According to his account in the London Daily Mail (May 20, 1909), there were two men next to it, both wearing bulky fur coats and fur caps. When they saw Mr. Lethbridge watching them, they babbled excitedly to each other in a language he could not understand, then jumped into the object which then flew off into the night sky. Later, as in so many other cases, assorted junk was found at the site, including a metal machine part which was clearly stamped "Made in France." Naturally everyone concluded that Mr. Lethbridge had obviously

encountered a pair of secret inventors from France who had performed the incredible feat—incredible for that period—of flying the channel unnoticed and at night. They landed in Wales, had a midnight snack, made repairs, and flew off again. Since their passports were not in order, Mr. Lethbridge had alarmed them and they had fled. Apparently neither the men in "bulky fur coats" nor their marvelous flying machine were ever seen again.

The exact size of the men is not given. If they were of unusually large dimensions perhaps the editor decided to exclude that bit of information, just as modern editors frequently leave out the wilder details of the modern UFO reports because they might tend to discredit the witness or make his story seem even more ridiculous.

In the fall of 1965, a time when still another massive UFO "flap" was engulfing Mexico and the rest of the world, Mexican newspapers carried accounts of three unnamed women in a southern suburb of Mexico City who claimed they encountered a group of beings at least ten feet tall with glowing red eyes. The witnesses said the creatures were wearing shiny gray garments and boots, but had no discernible noses or mouths. They did not linger to study the beings but ran to the police.

The UFO buffs either suppress such stories (by not publishing them in their little journals) or they try to explain them away with speculative nonsense often more outlandish than the original tales. The late Frank Edwards, author of two widely-read UFO books, solved the problem by merely altering the details to suit whatever theory he was pushing. He converted many giants into the more acceptable "little men."

One of the many giant stories almost lost in the shuffle was the account of a badly frightened truckdriver named Eugenio Douglas who allegedly tried to fight out off three "shiny metal robots" some fifteen to twenty feet tall with a revolver in Argentina on October 18, 1963. He told police that he drove his truck into a ditch after a

brilliant white light engulfed it near the town of Monte Maix. The light, he said, came from a twenty-five-foot disk parked in the middle of the highway. He leaped from his cab and, as the three "indescribable beings" got out of the saucer and approached him, flourished the revolver he carried to ward off hijackers. He fired four shots at them and ran wildly toward the town. The saucer made several passes at him, he said, and each time he felt a "wave of terrible, suffocating heat." The police examiner later found that Douglas had suffered several unusual burns, unlike anything he had ever seen before.

The Aerial Phenomena Research Organization (APRO) in Tucson, Arizona has struggled to investigate and keep track of UFO creature reports since 1952. Except for their efforts, many important landing cases would have gone entirely unnoticed and unrecorded. In the fall of 1967 an APRO investigator in Brazil, Mrs. Irene Granchi, interviewed the witnesses to a strange incident that took place outside of Rio de Janeiro on November 24 of that year. A high-pitched whine had alerted a fourteen-year-old boy, Carlos Alberto do Mascimento, and led him to look out of the eighth-floor apartment on the Rua Gomes Caneiro where he was working. He saw a brilliant metallic-looking disk descending into some nearby trees. The object brushed one tall tree and the tree "seemed to explode." Carlos called Mr. Ugo Battaglia to the window, and they both saw three men in white coveralls climb out of the grounded saucer and walk stiffly around it. Both witnesses noticed that the men held their arms tightly to their sides (a feature noted in several of the 1954 European cases). After about five minutes the trio reentered the object. Later, when Carlos and Mr. Battaglia left the apartment house, they looked up at the hill and the object was still there. But after they had turned a corner and looked back, the thing was gone.

The next day Carlos, Mr. Battaglia, and Hildebrando de Moraes

decided to visit the place where the object had landed. The grass in the area was flattened, and the tree Carlos had seen "wrenched apart" was bare of leaves. The trunk was burned and charred but all of its neighbors were intact except for a few broken limbs.

Hildebrando discovered that the grass and shrubbery in that immediate area were so high that he went out of sight when he walked through them. He is five feet eight inches tall. Yet both Carlos and Battaglia had noticed that the three men in coveralls were only knee-deep in this same grass as they walked around their craft. If all this is true, then both the object and the beings must have been gigantic in size.

Mrs. Coral Lorenzen of APRO has written a series of popular books on UFOs discussing dozens of perplexing UFO monster stories. In UFOs Over the Americas she devotes a full chapter to an interview with a witness in Lima, Peru, who claimed an extraordinary UFO encounter back in 1947. The witness, identified only as Mr. C. A. V., was interviewed by APRO investigator Richard Greenwell on October 4, 1967—twenty years after the event. He came upon a grounded shiny disk on a highway outside of Lima one night, and when he approached it on foot, he was met by two incredible amoeba-like creatures. They looked like bananas joined together. Their skin was sandy-colored with a towel-like texture, and they were about five feet five inches tall. A voice came at him "as if it came from a speaker," addressing him in English, a language he could understand. The voice told him that the creatures were sexless and they demonstrated by suddenly dividing themselves like amoebae. After conducting him on a quick tour of the rather barren interior of their flying saucer, they departed.

The whole story deserves more attention than we can give it here. One of the significant details is the fact that the man felt a loss of volition. "I was in a state where I was not under my own command," he said. Later he suffered the classic "contactee"

symptoms of anorexia (loss of appetite) and total exhaustion. Such symptoms often indicate that the witness suffered a hallucinatory experience somewhat akin to hypnosis and that somehow a confabulation, or falsified memory, was fed into the brain. The brain is an electrical organism and there is evidence that the phenomenon is able to manipulate electrical energies and, possibly, even plant a false memory, complete with all sensory data, into the mind. Such confabulations are so convincing and so deeply entrenched that the witness can pass a lie detector test and can recall every detail even twenty years later.

It will take years of study, medical tests, and continuous observation of UFO witnesses before we can conclusively understand this confabulation factor or prove conclusively that it is the main explanation for many of these puzzling cases.

There are, of course, many other cases which cannot be so easily explained (although confabulation is hardly an "easy" answer). In many UFO landings identical markings have been found on the ground, indicating that a solid mechanical object had actually touched down. Burn marks, traces of chemicals and metals, and other kinds of hard physical evidence have been discovered in innumerable cases over the past twenty years.

The main problem seems to be to prove the nature and purpose of the flying saucers, but the coterie has been more concerned with trying to prove the existence of the phenomenon. The objects frequently appear and disappear suddenly in front of groups of witnesses, almost as if they had been invisible at first or become suddenly invisible. Many UFO characteristics follow the patterns well known to students of ghost lore and psychic phenomena. These psychic patterns are now attracting the most attention from the few serious, open-minded UFOlogists. New theories are bubbling from fine minds around the world. The old UFOlogy which emphasized the largely mythical governmental "conspiracy

of censorship," the acceptance that the "outer space/extraterrestrial origin" hypothesis was the best possible explanation, and the endless emotional struggle for a "congressional investigation into UFOs" is dying out. In its stead, a new UFOlogy is beginning to emerge. The new UFOlogists have cast aside the old neurotic (and paranoid) cause and are concentrating on a careful study of all the data, excluding nothing. The correlations between psychic phenomena and UFO manifestations are finally being noticed, and the pieces of this fascinating jigsaw puzzle are finally being fitted into place.

Mr. Charles Bowen, editor of Britain's Flying Saucer Review, the only recognized scientific journal devoted to the subject, recently wrote:

> What is going on? Did these witnesses, widely dispersed on earth, and in time, all have experiences with solid creatures from another world or from another dimension of reality? Or did they all suffer hallucinations of a similar kind, where the dream creatures were strikingly similar in many respects? . . . I pondered over the idea that the frightening, spooky creatures described by some witnesses could be some sort of psychic projection. There are noticeable dream-like qualities about the incidents described in these cases. Is it possible that something from somewhere is coming here and by means incomprehensible to us—although it could be by a form of radiation, as in radar waves—is pumping stylized pictures into the minds of humans who inadvertantly stumble upon solid enough objects surreptitiously going about their business? . . . And while the human witnesses are ridiculed by their fellows, the interlopers get on with the job unhindered.

Mr. Gordon Creighton, a gifted linguist who has served in key positions in the British Foreign Service, has this to say: "If and when we have grasped what these tales of 'landings' and 'contacts' with entities mean, we may (perhaps) be on the road to understanding some of the larger aspects of the problem.

"One thing at least is certain. These stories of alleged meetings with denizens of other worlds or realms or levels of existence constitute a fascinating social, psychological—and possibly also a para-psychological enigma . . . If a new brand of psychosis is loose amongst us, then, instead of wasting so much time on why we hate our fathers and love our mothers, our mental experts and psychologists ought to been in there right from the start, studying and combating this new plague since its outbreak nearly twenty years ago! Valuable time has been lost."

This book's main purpose is to present the many monster and creature sightings with a minimum of theorization, but we cannot ignore the many correlating details in the cases we have already discussed. Those details suggest that many of these events may have been somehow interrelated and may, when viewed in toto, represent a larger whole. Witnesses of the hairy monsters and witnesses to UFO events and psychic manifestations have experienced many of the same things. It now seems possible that many of the ghost tales and monster stories of folklore and demonology may have had a real basis in fact but were subject to misinterpretation. Instead of deal" ing with mere extraterrestrial visitants, as the students of the UFO reports like to believe, we may be dealing with brief glimpses of something far broader and infinitely more complex.

One of the paradoxes of the UFO data is that the sheer weight of it negates its validity. There have now been millions of UFO sightings and thousands of landings and contacts. Yet it has all come to naught. We know as little now about the real phenomena

as we did when the first flying saucer craze swept the country twenty-three years ago. The carefully investigated and reported sightings and events are filled with obvious contradictions and impossibilities. Magnificently designed machines of apparent solidity have been described by witnesses of high reliability such as generals, top officials, scientists, astronomers, pilots, and police officers. Now, if other equally reliable witnesses had reported identical machines in other parts of the country and the world, we could say with certainty that such machines are real and do exist. But this has not happened. The same description rarely appears again in another report. The general configurations—saucer-shaped, cigar-shaped, etc. are uniform, but close-up witnesses—and there have been many—just do not seem to agree. The descriptions are as varied as the reports themselves. Correlations are difficult.

The reported UFO entities are also a mixed bag, not only in size but in general appearance. There have been UFOnauts with pupil-less eyes, glowing eyes, eyes as big as saucers, tiny beady eyes, wrap-around slit-eyes, cat-like eyes, and even no eyes at all. There have been noseless entities and mouthless entities. Ears have covered a wide range—from being pointed to being elephant-like. Have all these people been seeing the same thing? Hardly. The skeptics prefer to believe that none of them have seen anything at all.

Gordon Creighton focused his attention on the numerous landing reports from South America in 1965, and he broke the cases involving descriptions of the UFOnauts into the following categories:

TABLE 11.1

UFO Occupant Descriptions in South America (1965)

General description	Number of cases
Giants	6
Tall men	9
Medium or normal-sized men	5
Small men	10
Tiny men (less than 3 feet high)	12
Hairy, bellicose dwarfs	5
Greenish creatures (green skin, green lights)	3
Hairy giant	1

SOURCE: The Humanoids (1969), p. 86.

Mr. Creighton also commented on the fact that five cases involved creatures with only one visible eye. Two of these were reportedly over six feet in height; the other three, all from Peru within a period of less than thirty days (August–September 1965), were supposedly less than three feet tall.

Early in February 1965 five luminous, transparent objects landed outside of the village of Torrent in the Province of Corrientes, N.E. Argentina, and five six to seven feet tall, creatures all with only one eye in the center of their forehead, reportedly attacked the villagers. They entered a farmhouse, according to the report of Rodrigo de Riana, and tried to grab a man. He and his friends fought back (noting that the creatures seemed extremely fragile and weak), and the entities withdrew. But a day or so later they were back, and once again they tried to catch a specimen for their zoo. This time the villagers turned out in force with rifles and shotguns and blasted away, apparently without effect, and the creatures left again empty-handed.

Another one-eyed giant, this one with a vivid red complexion, no ears or nose, and a strange mouth, reportedly descended into a

garden in the residential suburb of Familia Sagrada, Belo Horizonte, Brazil, on August 28, 1963, and approached three boys. One of the boys grabbed a brick and started to fling it but the entity shot "an orange beam" at him from a square lamp on its chest and "paralyzed" the boy's arm.

Fortunately, the boys emerged unscathed from this encounter. They were later closely interrogated by Professor Hulvio Brant Aleixo and other competent investigators who said they "found no reason to believe that the boys were not telling the truth."

In Arequipa, Southern Peru, Julio Lopez de Romana and Antonio Chaves Bedoya claimed they narrowly missed running over a tiny one-eyed being on September 29, 1965. It was eighty centimeters high (thirty-one inches), they said, and seemed to have silver and golden stripes around its body. A UFO appeared a few minutes later and flew along with their car for some distance. That night others in the area reported seeing a low-flying UFO, too.

A good many flying saucer reports seem to overlap into the realm of psychic phenomena. In August 1966, for example, five different people in Malvern, Arkansas, reported encounters with a luminous, unidentified walking object which was described as eight feet tall and multi-colored—red, orange, and yellow. Many a ghost tale is probably based upon the appearances of these Incomprehensibles. They seem to assume form, sometimes only temporarily.

On September 19, 1963, four children playing behind a school in Saskatoon, Saskatchewan, Canada, reportedly saw an oval-shaped light descend from the sky after circling overhead. A "box" seemed to fall from it and hover a few feet away. The children cautiously approached it and were startled when a "man" stood up, appearing suddenly. "After that we didn't see any box," Brian Whitehead, eleven, later told investigators.

The children estimated that the "man" was about ten feet tall,

dressed in clothes "like a monk's" which were "white like a crayon." "Sometimes I could see right through him," Brian said.

The "man" made a moaning sound, held out his hands, floated towards the youngsters. They ran in terror. One of the girls in the group became so hysterical that she actually had to be hospitalized. Their parents and the local police were impressed with their genuine fright and took their story seriously. UFO-type lights were seen in the district.

But not all UFOnauts are "ghosts."

In his study of the 1954 cases, Dr. Vallee discovered that a majority appeared to be air breathing creatures. A few were described as wearing some form of helmet or breathing apparatus. Some witnesses claimed that the UFOnauts, particularly the "little men" types, were wearing "diving suits." In ten of the two hundred 1954 cases, the UFO occupants were described being of normal human height and appearance.

Could it be possible that normal-looking human beings are riding around in flying saucers? There are now hundreds of cases in which this seems so.

As far back as 1897 there have been innumerable stories of UFO occupants who resembled human beings physically. In many of these events the UFOnauts were described as slight of stature, usually between five feet five and five feet nine inches tall, with dark olive complexions, angular faces with pointed chins, high cheekbones, and slanted, Oriental-like eyes. This has become a very common description. There is also an interesting body of reports, several hundred cases from all parts of the world, in which the "little men," the "normal sized" types, and the giants were all described in this same way. Another interesting feature which turns up in many reports, both historical and modern, is that the fingers of these entities seem to be extraordinarily long, much longer and more slender than normal human hands.

To compound the confusion, we also have a large file of fascinating "man in black" cases, largely unpublished, which describe entities of this exact type, dressed in black, who turned up in the homes of witnesses throughout the country, dressed in conventional clothing and driving conventional cars. In some cases these persons strongly advised the witnesses to keep silent about what they had seen. For years the UFO buffs have assumed that they were representatives of the Air Force or even of the CIA. The testimonial evidence, the descriptions of the witnesses, indicates, however, that these "men in black" are not a part of the government at all but are, instead, directly related to the UFO phenomenon.

One of Argentina's leading newspapers Cordoba told (on Nov. 29, 1964) how a doctor and his wife were driving from Cordoba to Rio Ceballos on the night of June 5, 1964, when they saw something flying towards them. They were about thirty kilometres from the Paja Blancas Airport so they assumed it was an airplane. Shortly after this a blinding light appeared on the road in front of them.

Translator Gordon Creighton describes the incident in Flying Saucer Review:

> Thinking it was the headlights of an approaching vehicle, the doctor flashed his own lights as a signal to the other to dip his, for the light was so powerful that it was impossible to see the road at all. But the light remained undimmed and continued to approach, so the doctor gave up and pulled in to the side of the road and stopped.
>
> The unknown vehicle finally halted only one meter (yard) in front of his car, its bright light now fading slowly to violet, and they were able to perceive an

elongated object. The doctor's wife became panicky, and they sat there for twenty minutes . . . The doctor had at last decided to get out and investigate when suddenly he saw somebody approaching. The doctor had his revolver at the ready, when he heard a soft voice ask: "Qué le pasa, amigo?" ("What's the matter, friend?"). The doctor replied that he had been trying to start his engine again but couldn't. The voice replied: "Why don't you try it again?" He did so, and the engine started. Then he put his lights on, and he saw that the object in front of him was something unknown, something the like of which he had never seen before. I will continue the account in the doctor's own words: "Then the man standing near the car glanced at me with a smile and said, 'Don't be frightened. I'm a terrestrial. I have a mission to complete here on earth. My name is R_____ D_____, my friend, and you can tell Mankind about it, in your own fashion.' "

"The doctor added that the man then walked off slowly towards two beings, both dressed entirely in gray, who were waiting for him. All three got into the machine, which then took off swiftly, leaving a violet-colored trail.

You can see that the possibilities are boundless. The UFO phenomenon gives us a monster for every occasion; creatures with six arms, amoeba-like blobs, one-eyed giants, hairy "little men"—you name it and somewhere in UFO lore you will find that somebody has seen it. As if all this isn't trouble enough, we have apparent UFO entities driving around in black Cadillacs, and seemingly normal human-beings popping out of purple Impossibles on isolated highways.

TWELVE

The Big Joke from Outer Space

TWO POLICE OFFICERS in Gaffney, South Carolina, had a brief and not very informative chat with a little man in a tight-fitting gold suit early on the morning of November 17, 1966. They didn't know it, but scores of other apparently sober and reliable people have been reporting identical experiences for many years. These "little men" are an important part of flying saucer lore. They have also been the butt of many jokes ever since the New Yorker published a cartoon some years back depicting a "little man" from a flying saucer addressing a horse in a field, "Take me to your leader."

The United States Air Force apparently received a rash of "little men" reports in the early 1950s, for in 1955 Captain Robert White, then Pentagon spokesman for the official UFO-chasing Project Blue Book, told the press: "In the past three years I've heard all kinds of descriptions [of UFOnauts], but the most frequent are little, green, luminous smelly types. Despite all the stories, I'm still convinced that no space men have landed on earth. Still, people keep insisting that they've seen little green men."

South America seems to have been inundated with "little green

men" in recent years. A fifteen-year-old boy named Alberto San Roman Nuez told the police in Lima, Peru, that he had been on the roof of his home, taking in the wash on August 1, 1965, when a saucer-like thing landed near him and discharged a three-and-one-half-foot tall being who had "greenish lights on his skin that made him look like a frog." Terrified, Alberto ran for the stairs. As he did, a red light from the object enveloped him for a moment and then it flew away, heading for the ocean. Police later found four circular marks, each a foot in diameter, on the roof.

Another rooftop landing, also in Lima, occurred on August 24, 1965, when twenty students and their adult teachers heard some strange sounds on top of their school. They went to the roof and discovered a throbbing, disk-shaped object which took off as they all ran for cover. There have been many landings and sightings around schools all over the world. The sensational, much-publicized sightings in Hillsdale, Michigan, in 1966 took place directly in front of a dormitory on a college campus. And hundreds of children, teachers, and nearby adult residents saw circular, seemingly metallic objects hovering low over the Crestview Elementary School in Miami, Florida, on April 6, 1967.

From all the reports it is painfully obvious that the UFOs and their strange occupants have a special—and perhaps unsavory—interest in children.

On October 4, 1965, three hysterical children charged into the office of the headmaster of the Liberator General San Martin School in Salta, Argentina, and told him that several short, ugly greenish monsters had attacked them and tried to catch them while they were walking to school. The story was nothing new to the headmaster. He told reporters he had heard the same sort of thing before—about two years earlier.

There are now hundreds of cases in which the UFOnauts have reportedly spoken to witnesses in the local language, and have

even made bids for publicity. Argentine shopkeeper Felipe Martinez claimed three separate encounters with a "little man" a yard high, who wore a "diver's costume" and helmet and spoke Portuguese slowly, with difficulty. Martinez said that "they" asked him to help them gain recognition but he told them that all he could do was to report the meeting to a radio station. Later, after another alleged meeting, he said he was taken aboard a saucer with four crewmen all less than a meter in height [less than 39 inches], while a fifth occupant was a blond man about six feet tall. On that occasion, he said, the crewmen put a "space suit" on him but it caused his heart to pump so rapidly that he had to take it off. That was in 1965.

On August 14, 1965, Joao do Rio, a railway worker, was fishing on the River Paraiba near the village of Cruzeiros in Brazil when a saucer-like object landed nearby and a tiny man seventy centimeters high (28 inches) with big luminous eyes addressed him in perfect Portuguese. He said he was from "another world" and authorized Rio to tell whomever he pleased. Then he handed the astonished fisherman a small metal disk, said he would return, hopped back into his saucer, and flew off. The young witness reportedly turned the disk over to the authorities for analysis, and that's the last we ever heard of that.

Another piece of metal, this one bearing a "peculiar inscription," was apparently dropped in front of two students near the Mexican Polytechnic Institute in Mexico City, Mexico, on August 19, 1965. The students, Yago and Payo Rodriguez, said that at 8:30 A.M. that morning a luminous, domed disk landed on tripod legs near them, and two small creatures about eighty centimeters (about thirty-one inches) tall and wearing "gas masks" got out, dropped the metal plate in front of them, and flew off again. Investigators found the grass was burned at the alleged landing site, and there were marks where the tripod legs had rested. Drops of a strange fluid were also

found. Similar fluid has been found at many other UFO landing sites. It consists of alumina and silicon, both mundane earthly substances. The metal plate was turned over to the laboratory of the National Polytechnic Institute and nothing further was said about it.

Flying saucer "flaps" have occurred repeatedly around reservoirs, lakes, and rivers indicating, perhaps, that water plays an important role in the UFO mystery. For example, hundreds of people saw all kinds of mysterious aerial objects around the Wanaque, New Jersey, reservoir in 1966. A fisherman named Jose Alves of Pontal, Brazil, identified as a hardworking, quiet man who has never even heard of flying saucers before his experience, said that he saw three little dark-skinned men get out of a flying object on November 4, 1954, and one of them filled a shiny metal tube with water from the River Pardo.

Numerous Indian tribes in western United States and Canada have legends about "little men" who come to specific lakes and rivers for water year after year; these places have been avoided by the Indians and regarded as sacred. In Mexico there are extensive legends about the "Wachoqs," little people who visited Mexican streams and lakes in the distant past, walking underwater in glittering "diving suits."

The Irish have always told us of "little men" in tight-fitting green or brown costumes who frequent lakes and rivers on the old sod. While most of us tend to dismiss the Leprechaun lore of Ireland as folk tales and myth, there are a number of impressive and well-documented books relating the numerous appearances of these tiny, elusive beings. In many of these accounts the witnesses allegedly encountered Leprechauns on the banks of a stream or lake where they were filling a receptacle with water. Like most of our UFOnauts, the Leprechaun is supposed to be skittish and flees from human beings. And, also like our UFOnauts and monsters,

the Leprechauns are supposed to be capable of leaping great distances and disappearing into thin air.

In Sweden and Denmark we hear about trolls—gnome-like beings who live in the earth and who are physically deformed. The Leprechauns are supposed to live underground, too, and woe to anyone who tries to find their hiding places. From time to time they are said to kidnap children and whisk them away forever. In UFO lore we have the "Deros" (detrimental robots) who are supposed to live underground in secret caves, or even in the hollowed-out center of the earth. Variations on this underground-dweller theme can be found in ancient Oriental legends going back thousands of years.

Not all of the "little people" mythology is baseless. Archaeological evidence of a sort does exist. The ruins of ancient cities in South America have been found honeycombed with tiny tunnels, staircases, and passageways so small that normal men have to traverse them on their hands and knees. Who built these things and why? Even in the United States, in New Salem, New Hampshire, not far from Exeter, site of a UFO "flap" in 1965, there is an ancient construction of tunnels and tiny chambers built long before the Indians arrived. They say "the little men" constructed the place. Another elaborate system of tiny tunnels lies outside of Cusco, Peru, home of many intense saucer "flaps." A large number of people reported seeing two luminous dwarfs get out of a disk near Cusco on August 20, 1965. And the Lt. Governor of Santa Barbara, Peru, solemnly declared that he encountered two tiny humanoids walking in the snows near Lake Ceulacocha on September 12, 1965. They disappeared, he said, in the midst of a "deafening noise."

This unfathomable ability to vanish instantly into thin air is described in many reports. During the August 1965 "flap" six witnesses in Grand Forks, North Dakota said they saw a blinking

transparent circular object resting on a golf course and that it contained "little figures inside . . . moving like a silhouette." When some of the witnesses ran towards the object, it disappeared with a loud bang. "It just blew up," one of them observed. Other transparent objects have been seen many times over the years. On August 28, 1962, three people encountered a brightly lit object on the ground three hundred yards from National Highway No. 2, near the city of Delores, Argentina. It was, they said, about thirty feet long and fifteen feet high and there were "human-like figures moving about inside the machine." These were nighttime sightings. Suppose these same objects flew over your house during the day; would you be able to see them at all?

The human eye can be compared to a radio receiver: It is tuned to detect only a very small portion of the electromagnetic spectrum, the middle range of electromagnetic waves known as visible light: Thus, any wave tuned to a frequency above or below that range is invisible to the naked eye: The evidence indicates that occult and UFO activities are largely conducted in those frequencies beyond human perception: Man-made instruments, such as radar, are tuned to those higher, unseen frequencies and can occasionally intercept objects unseen to the human eye.

Invisible flying saucers are possible!

"They [UFOs] are invisible to the human eye," a spokesman from the British War Office told the London Sunday Dispatch in October 1954. Radar installations in Great Britain had repeatedly picked up whole formations of unidentified objects that September, some of them passing overhead at low altitude. Military personnel scrambled outside their offices to take a look and were much puzzled to find the skies clear and empty. "Every time, they have followed the same pattern, always around mid-day," the War Office spokesman continued. "All our radar sets in the area have picked them up." The full story is told in Major

Donald E. Keyhoe's book, The Flying Saucer Conspiracy.

At least one "contactee" has been told that flying saucers are normally invisible to us. The witness, Gary Wilcox, was a hardworking young man alone on a three-hundred-acre farm outside of Newark Valley, New York. Around 10:00 A.M. on Friday, April 24, 1964, Mr. Wilcox was out spreading fertilizer when he saw a flash of light, like a mirror reflection, and discovered an egg-shaped object hovering a few feet off the ground nearby. It was, he said, about twenty feet long and twelve to fifteen feet wide with rounded ends. Puzzled, he walked over to it and touched it. "It was just like touching an automobile," he later told investigators, "and there was a sound like a motor idling."

Suddenly two small figures dropped to the ground from the underside of the object. Although they were human in shape, they were only about four feet tall and both were encased in silvery one-piece suits. Their heads and faces were also covered by the same opaque material, and they were holding trays on which they appeared to have soil samples. Their hands were out of sight under these trays.

"Don't be afraid," Wilcox was told by one of them. He spoke in a deep voice that seemed to come from his chest rather than his head. "We have talked to people before."

They were somewhat surprised that he could see them, Wilcox reported, and they told him that their craft was normally invisible at distances beyond one hundred feet. Furthermore, they did most of their work in the daytime because their vehicles were harder to see then. At night, they said, their craft tended to glow in the dark and betray their positions.

Wilcox, a sober, well-educated, articulate young man, dutifully reported his story to the local sheriff and signed a sworn statement on May 1, 1964. We have a copy of that statement in our files. In it, Wilcox stated that the UFOnauts had told him that astronauts John

Glenn, Virgil Grissom and two Soviet cosmonauts would die within a year due to "exposure to space." This prophecy was not too precise. John Glenn slipped in his bathtub and damaged his inner ear which affected his sense of balance for several months. Coincidentally, Yuri Gargarin, Russia's first man into space, suffered an identical accident around the same time.

In January 1965 Virgil Grissom was among the three astronauts who died in the disastrous fire aboard an Apollo space capsule undergoing testing. Four months later, on April 24, 1967, exactly three years after Wilcox's encounter, Russian cosmonaut Colonel Vladimir Kosmarov died when his space capsule crashed. Gargarin was killed a year later in a plane crash.

Wilcox said that the "little men" talked to him for about two hours, discussing many things that were beyond his comprehension. They warned him, he said, that it would be "in his best interests" not to talk about the incident. When they finally got back into the object, it glided upward a short distance and suddenly seemed to vanish. A reddish jelly-like substance remained behind on the ground. Wilcox said he couldn't seem to get hold of it with his hands to pick it up. It melted away in a day or so.

Dr. Berthold E. Schwarz, a leading psychiatrist, visited Mr. Wilcox in 1968 and carefully examined him. "There was no evidence for any undue preoccupations, trends of thought, pathological thinking, or inappropriate effect," Dr. Schwarz later noted in his report in the Flying Saucer Review.

Another young farmer, Carroll Wayne Watts, came up with a somewhat more horrifying story in 1967. He received nationwide publicity in March 1968, after failing a lie detector test in Amarillo, Texas. The Watts story is filled with "mystery men" and the other ingredients so unpopular with UFOlogists who prefer to think in straightforward terms of benevolent Big Brothers from outer

space.

For Carroll Watts the nightmare began at 10:30 P.M. on Friday, March 31, 1967. He was driving home towards Loco, Texas, when he saw a strange light near an abandoned house. He turned off the road and headed for the light. When he got closer he saw an object he said was about a hundred feet long and eight or ten feet high. He stopped and got out of his car to investigate. There was a door on the side of the thing which slid open, and then a detached voice spoke to him. "It was an unemotional voice," he said, "neither masculine or feminine. It asked me if I would be willing to submit to a rigorous physical examination. I asked them why I would want to take a physical and they told me that if I passed it, I would be able to make a flight with them. They said any man who passed the physical could make a flight, but no women or children would be taken.

"They pointed out a machine against the opposite wall from where I was standing," he continued. "They said all I had to do was stand before the machine to take a physical.

"About two or three feet forward from the machine was a map. It was about a yard square and began about a foot from the floor. It appeared to be a large-scale land map—but I couldn't tell what it was a map of.

"Then they informed me that they had a machine that, when the ship flew within three hundred yards of a building, could tell how many people were in the building and their ages.

"They, whoever 'they' were, said they were stationed all over the world and could come and go as they pleased—no one could stop them . . . When I declined the physical, they told me that several people had taken the test and had made flights."

Mr. Watts said "No, thanks" and returned to his car as the object rose noiselessly and flew away. He reported the incident to the Air Force and local authorities and was taken seriously. His reputation

was described as "beyond reproach" and three others, including an Air Force man, had reported sightings in that same area only a few days before.

Two weeks later, on Tuesday, April 11, 1967, Watts said he saw another light near his home, and the engine of his pick-up truck stalled. When he got out, he found an egg-shaped object directly behind him. A door opened and four small men appeared. They were less than five feet tall, he said, seemed muscular, had elongated eyes and slit-like mouths which did not move when they spoke. They were dressed in "white coverall-type suits." They asked him again to go with them and this time he went. He claimed that he was flown to a much larger craft where he was examined by some sort of machine which probed his body with wires.

In the months which followed, he saw the "little men" again and took eleven photographs of them and their craft. Six of these were eventually turned over to the FBI and one of the pictures went to Dr. J. Allen Hynek. Dr. Hynek was quoted in the press as taking the whole story seriously.

In February 1968 Carroll Watts consented to take a lie detector test. On Sunday, February 25, he started out for Amarillo to submit to the test. Near Hedley, Texas, on Route 287 he came upon a 1957 Plymouth which was apparently in trouble. A woman stood next to it, and he stopped to see if he could help her. Two rugged men carrying rifles suddenly popped up from under a nearby culvert and threatened him, he claimed. He said they struck him about the shoulders with their weapons and warned him that if he passed the lie detector test he would never return home alive.

A very frightened Carroll Watts entered the Amarillo Security Control Company that afternoon. He submitted to the test but deliberately lied, he declared later, so that the results would be negative.

When he returned home that evening he noticed a car parked a

short distance away. It began to cruise back and forth in front of his house. He dug out an M-l rifle, loaded it, and hid behind a storm cellar next to the house. The car was passing back and forth without headlights. On its final pass there were three loud reports, as if the occupants of the car were shooting at the house. Watts fired back with his M-1, shooting at the retreating car three times. Then he called the local police. Investigators found six spent cartridges next to the storm cellar but there were no marks of any kind on the house.

A former Air Force officer, Captain Robert B. Loftin, author of Identified Flying Saucers performed a first-hand study of the case. He was impressed with the harassed witness who, incidentally, had hinted that he suspected the CIA was behind it all and was trying to "hush him up." The story is now being circulated among UFOlogists as "another CIA silencing."

The UFOnaut stratagems are varied and seemingly pointless. Sometimes they threaten witnesses. Sometimes they pass along prophecies which later come true. And sometimes they just seem to drop in for a meaningless chat with whatever earthman happens to be handy.

Two police officers in South Carolina participated in one of these chats back in 1966. Their story appeared in only a single local newspaper, and months later it was briefly mentioned in the pages of Fate magazine. In that account the two men described the "little man" as having "a greenish complexion."

Had two police officers really seen a "little green man?" In November of 1967 we finally had the opportunity to find out. We gave a lecture in Atlanta, Georgia, and then rented a car and drove to Gaffney, South Carolina, to chase the story down.

Patrolman Charles Hutchins, one of the witnesses, turned out to be an ebullient man, stocky, about five feet ten inches tall, in his early thirties. He regarded us with some suspicion at first, asking

for assurance that we were "not with the government." Like most of the country, he had heard of the well-publicized tragedy of the Ohio police officer, Dale Spaur, who had lost his job and suffered all kinds of unpleasantness after being involved in the celebrated Ohio UFO chase of April 1966.

We adjourned to an empty room in the police station, and he began with a confession. The "little man" had not had a "green complexion" as was reported in the newspapers, he said. When he and officer A. G. Huskey had first told their story they had been subjected to so many jeers that they impishly added the "green complexion." Actually, he admitted, the creature's face seemed rather ordinary and human-like and neither man was able to tell whether his complexion was light or dark.

Hutchins had been on the Gaffney police Force for about six months at the time, and Huskey had been a policeman for five years. Sometime after 4:00 A.M. on the morning of November 17, 1966, the two men were making a routine patrol along the isolated and unpopulated road through an outlying section of Gaffney known as the West Buford Street Extension when, as they neared a right-angle bend in the road, they suddenly saw a metallic object directly in front of them. This object was descending when they first saw it, Hutchins said, and was about twenty feet above the ground. He described it as being spherical, like a ball, with a wide, flat rim around it. There were no lights or portholes visible on it. It was completely dark, reflecting a dull gold color in the headlights of the police car. Their car did not stall.

As the object settled to within a few feet of the ground, both men got out of their car in a state of benumbed amazement. Later Hutchins estimated that the object must have been about twenty feet in diameter. A small door suddenly opened noiselessly on the underside of the sphere, he said, and a short ladder, four to six feet long, dropped down. White light poured out of the opening, but

neither man could see anything in the interior. A figure appeared in the doorway, descended the ladder, and walked slowly and deliberately toward the two police officers. When the figure reached a point about fifteen to twenty feet from the two men, it stopped.

"He didn't move stiffly," Officer Hutchins told us. "He moved just like anybody else, but kind of slow . . . like he was taking his time. He wasn't scared of us or anything like that."

In appearance "he was about the size of a twelve-year old boy . . . maybe four feet." He wore no helmet or headgear and was dressed in "a gold suit with no buttons or zippers." His costume was shiny, like metal, in the reflection of the headlights. It was not self-luminous.

"We were both kind of shaky and scared," Hutchins admitted frankly. "So he did most of the talking. When we asked questions, he wouldn't answer us, but just went right on talking."

Hutchins could not remember seeing the feet of the creature. It was standing in high grass and the feet must have been hidden. Unfortunately, our interview took place a full year after the incident, and both men had understandably forgotten small details. They could not even remember the full context of the "conversation."

"He talked real good . . . like a college graduate," Hutchins claimed. "Didn't have any accent or anything. He acted like he knew exactly what he was saying and doing . . . didn't make any quick moves or false moves. He just stood there and talked to us."

What exactly was said? Officer Hutchins recalls that he stammered out a question like, "What are you doing here?" The creature didn't reply, but asked a question of his own. "He wanted to know why we were both dressed alike," Hutchins said, "So I guess we told him we were police officers."

"His speech was very . . . very precise. He pronounced each

word very carefully. I can't remember everything he said now . . . but it wasn't anything very important. I asked him where he was from but he didn't answer. He just laughed. He had a funny kind of laugh."

The confrontation was brief, perhaps only two or three minutes. Then, Hutchins said, the creature announced: "I . . . will . . . return . . . in . . . two . . . days" He turned, walked slowly back to the ladder, and climbed into the object. The door closed quietly and the craft began to whirr. "I wasn't like those whirring sounds in science-fiction movies . . . there was no screeching to it," Hutchins observed. "It was soft, like an engine with a muffler on it." The object rose slowly and vanished into the sky.

The two policemen said they stood there for a few minutes in stunned silence before they finally pulled themselves together and returned to the police station.

They went back to the site the next day with a local councilman named Hill and found several fresh footprints in the exact spot where the "little man" had stood. "They looked like children's footprints," Hutchins said. No casts were made.

Hutchins appeared to be a straightforward, honest witness. There were many details he could not remember, and it seemed he did not attempt to embellish his story at all. His reputation in Gaffney is excellent. Careful cross-examination failed to uncover any discrepancies in his narrative. Later we spoke to A. G. Huskey on the phone (we did not meet him). He confirmed Hutchins' story, but said he wanted to forget the whole thing. He had left the force and now operates his own business in Gaffney, a town of about ten thousand.

Neither Hutchins nor Huskey had read any UFO literature before the incident, nor do they seem very interested in such literature now. They were not aware of the numerous other far-flung contactee stories in which the witnesses also reported that the

UFOnauts declared they would return at a specific time (as a number of the South American cases cited earlier).

Both men revisited the landing site nightly for two weeks after the incident without seeing anything unusual. However, they did see a large orange ball sailing across the sky a few days later.

"Anyway, we don't know how long his days are," Hutchins observed sagely.

There are mysteries within the mysteries. The whole UFO/monster phenomenon is like a Chinese nest of boxes. Open one and you find another one inside. Since the early days of the flying saucer scare UFOlogists have carefully noted that UFOs seem to spend a lot of time around our atomic energy installations and other sites of strategic importance. But it is also true that an equal number of UFO sightings and events seem to be concentrated around gravel pits, garbage dumps, and cemeteries. In fact, it is probable that many of the earlier cemetery "ghost" sightings were actually UFO manifestations.

Our funny creatures also seem to be dispersed among and even interchangeable with our more bizarre monsters. When they are not hanging around atom bomb factories and garbage dumps, they are sniffing around oil wells and refineries, even in the heart of cities. One puzzling creature report which seems to be a mixture of many things took place in Erie, Pennsylvania, in 1966.

On the night of July 31, 1966, a glowing object chose to land on a deserted beach in Presque Isle Park, Erie, Pennsylvania, while five young people, in a car stuck in the sand a few hundred feet away, watched. After it landed, the object projected strange beams of light into a nearby woods. Then a tall, dark figure shuffled up to the car and terrified the witnesses, leaving a scratch on the roof of the vehicle. The next day quantities of silicon were found at the landing site, along with some peculiar cone-like indentations in the sand. The Presque Isle police vouched for the witnesses, and said

that they were sincerely frightened. Scores of other people in Erie reported seeing unusual aerial lights that same night.

When we went to Erie to investigate this case we found a curious note in the police files. A woman had called them to report another monster sighting. This one on West Third Street, facing Erie Harbor and directly across from Presque Isle. The woman, Mrs. Julie Helwig, told us that she was awakened by barking dogs at 5:30 A.M. on the morning Wednesday, August 3, 1966, and when she looked out the window she saw a human-shaped being about five feet six inches tall. It was clothed, she said, in a yellow jacket and yellow trousers with no discernible pockets, belts, or other features. The head, she said, was huge, moon-shaped, and when seen from the side the back appeared to be flat. This head was covered with "straggly" brown hair—a muddy color. The creature had very big shouldrs and a slender build. It moved with a stiff, jerky mechanical motion, holding its arms close to its sides. The arms did not move at all. Its legs did not bend at the knees. "He moved," she said, "like a mechanical wind-up toy." Local dogs were barking at its heels but it ignored them.

The sight of this creature frightened her and she woke up her husband. He looked out the window but, since he was not wearing his glasses, he said he only saw "something moving." The creature appeared across from the United Oil Storage Tanks on West Third Street and walked stiffly out of view.

Another woman in the area saw a similar creature that same week. This woman, who wants to remain anonymous, said she was driving down Third Street late at night when she saw the creature. She stopped her car. It came up to the car, "pounded on the hood," then moved off into the darkness.

Like so many other witnesses to the unbelievable, Mrs. Helwig felt very alone because no one took her story seriously. She had never heard of any similar stories herself. Now she knows that she

has plenty of company.[1]

Who or what are all these assorted spacemen, monsters, beasts, and bogeymen? It does look as if some of them—perhaps all of them—hitch rides aboard flying saucers. If so, do they all come from a single place, or are we being invaded by a hundred different groups from a hundred different unknown places?

Most of these monsters and humanoids obviously breathe our atmosphere without any trouble. Some of them seem to be able to speak our languages. If they come from another planet, then it must have environmental conditions almost identical to our own. The odds, our astronomers keep telling us, are against this possibility.

Do all of these characters know each other? Could it be that they are working in unison to accomplish their goals—whatever those goals might be?

In one little-publicized incident the footprints of both giants and dwarfs were found together in the vicinity of a single UFO touchdown. It happened on December 24, 1960, outside of Durango, Colorado. On that Christmas Eve over a dozen witnesses saw a huge, intensely-lighted object swing down from the sky and disappear among the trees on a nearby peak. "At the top of it you could definitely see a circle or dome," Wade Folsom later told the Durango Herald, "and every foot or so apart were lights . . . I wouldn't call them windows, because they didn't look like ordinary windows . . . They seemed to revolve—to flop over, one row after another."

The next day the Folsom's pet dog dashed into the house in a state of terror and died at their feet. Members of the family went up the mountainside and discovered an area where overhanging tree limbs had broken off. They found a vast number of footprints, unlike anything they had seen in the mountains before.

Undersheriff Myron Darmour and Deputy Bill Hiser later visited the site and reported that one set of prints were "definitely human" even though they were fifteen inches long. They were accompanied by other human-like footprints only five inches in length. These tracks led to a deserted mountain cabin, circled around it, and returned to the touchdown site.

A dog belonging to a neighbor of Folsom's reportedly disappeared on the night of the sighting and was never seen again.

Could it be that the "little men" and the giants are preparing to gang up on us?

We have made a grave but human mistake in trying to lump all these things together into a simple framework—assuming, for our peace of mind, that the unidentified flying objects are visitants from another planet, here merely to survey us before establishing contact. If all of this is the work of a superior intelligence from somewhere out there, it is infinitely more complicated than the UFO buffs have dreamed of. The deeper you plunge into this subject, the more complex it all becomes. One answer raises one hundred more questions.

Many of the objects and their occupants are openly hostile to us and have proven this in case after case. Almost all of the thousands of reports prove that "they" are conducting a vast program here as secretly as possible. Perhaps they occasionally plant "monsters" in "flap" areas and stage absurd events just to reinforce our skepticism and disbelief.

Are they buying time with our stupidity?

THIRTEEN

Cattle Rustlers from the Skies

In 1897 a farmer named Alexander Hamilton signed an affidavit swearing that he and his family had seen an illuminated "dirigible," occupied by very strange-looking beings, carry off one of his heifers. The animal's hide was found in a nearby field the next day. This story has been written up in almost every UFO book on the shelf so we will not linger over it here. It is a sobering fact that animal mutilations and disappearances occur with disturbing regularity in UFO "flap" areas, just as they seem to be an integral part of the general "monster" scene.

Three farmhands outside of Twin Falls, Idaho, told police that a glowing elliptical machine settled in a field near an isolated steer on September 7, 1956. The men started to run towards it but it shot upwards and disappeared. The steer apparently went with it, for it was gone. Another case, later discounted as an April Fool's Day joke, appeared in west coast newspapers in 1963. A bewildered farmer in Chileno Valley, California, was supposed to have reported that a flying saucer had stampeded his herd of cattle. Aroused by the rumpus, he reached the scene just in time to see a

group of "short men in white coveralls" grab a calf and haul it into the object.

A farmer in Isola, Italy, accused "three dwarves in metallic diving suits" of stealing several of his pet rabbits on November 14, 1954. He claimed he caught the thieves red-handed near his hutches. He said he had seen a bright cigar-shaped machine land nearby and had grabbed his rifle. But when he confronted the rustlers the rifle not only failed to fire but became so heavy he had to drop it. Then he found himself paralyzed, unable to move or speak, while the little men carried his rabbits off to the object and flew away.

In South America that UFOlogist paradise, police officials investigating extensive flying saucer reports in Barcelos, Brazil, in September 1962, learned that seventeen chickens, six pigs, and two cows had all vanished during the UFO wave. A man also disappeared during that "flap." His name was Tele-maco Xavier, and he vanished near the village of Vila Conceição late on the night of September 1, 1962. Three plantation workers testified that they had seen a lone man walking down a deserted road that night, when an illuminated circular object spraying sparks swept down from the sky. Three men leaped out, grabbed the lone stroller, and dragged him off. Whether or not Señor Xavier was that man remains unproven. But he was never seen again.

Minutes away from New York City several pigs reportedly vanished from their well-protected pens at the Agricultural College in Farmingdale during August 1967. There had been repeated power failures in the area throughout the summer, and many flying saucer sightings had taken place there. We visited the college and learned that single pigs had been removed from several different pens. Since the pigs were enclosed by high fences, it would have seemed more reasonable for an intelligent pig thief to confine his activities to one pen.

At 10:00 P.M. on February 5, 1968, many people in Farmingdale proper said that a large luminous sphere had appeared over the town.

West Virginia and Ohio have had all kinds of animal mysteries since their UFO "flap" began in 1966. Shortly after sundown on the evening of November 14, 1966, Newell Partridge of Salem, West Virginia, was watching television when suddenly the set "began to make noises like a generator." As he decided to take a look outside, his thoroughbred German shepherd, Bandit, "started carrying on something terrible." He flashed a light into a neighboring field and saw what he described as two bright red glowing objects. Bandit growled and ran into the field. The lights vanished, and the dog was never seen again.

A week later another West Virginian, a man who asked to remain anonymous "because people think those who see this thing are crazy," reported that a cigar-shaped object that "sounded like a Washington time signal" landed in his yard. His dog ran toward the object and was apparently attacked by something before the object flew off. The animal limped back bloody and badly frightened.

Across the Ohio River, William Watson's German shepherd disappeared early in November and was found a week later in the center of an isolated field on Georges Creek Road outside of Gallipolis, Ohio. The knee-high grass around the dog's body was pressed flat in a perfect circle twenty feet in diameter. Although there was no sign that the dog had been attacked by any known animal every bone in its body was crushed and there was absolutely no blood in evidence.

When we visited Gallipolis in December of that year, we discovered that many people had seen unidentified flying objects around Georges Creek road. Mrs. Marilyn Taylor told us that she had been driving there at 7:15 P.M. on the evening of December 9, 1966, when a circular reddish-orange light appeared in front of her

car at telephone-pole-height. It bobbed up and down, she said, and flashed beams of light towards the road. "It was the size of a helicopter, but it was no helicopter," she declared. She said she followed it for about a mile until she reached a well-lighted area near a transformer installation. Then the object shot into the air and disappeared. Her four children were with her in the car, and her six-year-old boy expressed great fear of the object.

A nurse who lives on a farm with her two teen-aged children outside of Gallipolis, sought us out and told us a long and involved story about her experiences with the objects and their occupants. She keeps cows on her farm and she claimed that someone was butchering them in her fields. She had seen the "rustlers" on several occasions and had gone after them with a shotgun. "They're tall men in white coveralls," she explained. "And they can certainly run and jump. I've seen them leap over high fences from a standing start."

This woman, whom we will call Mrs. Bryant, had seen large luminous spheres at treetop level around her home. Furthermore, she claimed that an elderly couple who had lived on her property for years had often told her about the strange lights in the area. Sightings went back thirty years. The couple had described them as being like "a lantern on a stick that somebody waves back and forth in the hills."

Mrs. Bryant's troubles with cattle "rustlers" had started back around 1963–64. Her house had burned to the ground during that period and she built a new one-story ranchhouse on the same site. The cattle "rustlers," she explained, had ruthlessly butchered a number of her animals very expertly. But they didn't seem to want the choice steak cuts. Instead they rather pointlessly removed the brains and other organs of little commercial value. And there was never any blood in evidence. She had complained repeatedly to both the police and the FBI.

Her children confirmed that strange things were also happening to their telephone, and Mrs. Bryant was convinced that someone was tapping it. She also said that she had once awakened alone in the house, unable to move, and felt a wave of almost overpowering heat as she heard the kitchen door open. She had double-locked it before going to bed, she assured us. While she lay there helplessly, she said she saw a tall figure walk through the kitchen and apparently go out another locked door on the other side. That door, we discovered when we visited the house, led to nowhere. There were no steps outside it; only a steep drop to the ground.

Other strange sounds pervaded the house, she claimed. She had heard heavy footsteps on the roof and loud metallic clangs.

The house is situated on a hill far back from a narrow dirt road and commands a good view of the surrounding area. Mrs. Bryant's twelve-year-old son told of his own sightings and he also remarked about the big Air Force "flying boxcar" cargo planes which frequently flew over the area at treetop level.

A year earlier we would have put Mrs. Bryant down as paranoid. Her story smacked of a persecution complex gone amok. But we had heard too many similar tales in our travels to take hers lightly.

Have you ever awakened in the middle of the night with the uneasy feeling that there was a stranger in the room, or in the house? This has happened to nearly everyone at some time or another, excluding, of course, the incidents in which that someone proved to be a real burglar or prowler. But it seems to happen too often with UFO witnesses and "contactees."

On a warm June evening in 1962, Gregory Sciotti, eighteen, woke up around 11:30 P.M. with that feeling. He was alone in the little house near Turtle Creek, Pennsylvania, for his mother worked on the night shift in a nearby factory.

"There was a light in the room," Mr. Sciotti wrote to us in 1967.

"I quickly tried to get up and found it impossible to move. I tried to turn my head to see where the light was coming from. This I also found impossible. It seems as though the only control I had was over my eyelids. The feeling I had was something like when you're very tired; you know, just too tired to move. Then I heard something on the steps just outside the door. Something like a heavy breathing sound. I heard it moving around. I tried to scream to find out if I was dreaming . . . but I couldn't do anything but move my eye lids. Then, just like it started, it stopped. The light went out and it was like I was pushing on something heavy and it suddenly moved."

He ran down the stairs, badly frightened, grabbed a rifle and loaded it. He called for his dog Teddy, a collie, who, he knew, was somewhere in the house. But Teddy was gone. He searched the grounds around the house with a flashlight. He had another dog which was kept tied in the yard. That animal was also gone.

The next night, he continued, he was sitting in his car in the driveway, talking with a girl friend, when a strange object rose up from the woods behind the house. Four windows were visible on a dark oval shape as it passed between the moon and the young couple. It was not an airplane, he declared.

"I feel rather silly discussing this," he concluded. "And have never mentioned it to anyone but my mother and my wife. My mother sort of laughed at me and told me I was dreaming . . . but there is not a doubt in my mind that the incident took place. We never did find a trace of our two dogs."

The best-publicized animal case of 1967 involved Snippy, the pet horse of Mrs. Berle Lewis, which was found mysteriously butchered near Alamosa, Colorado, that September. Flying saucers had been reported consistently in the area for over five years, according to Alamosa County Sheriff Ben Phillips. But he theorized that Snippy was the victim of a stray lightning bolt. A

pathologist from Denver examined the horse's carcass, however, and found that all of the fluid had been drained from the brain in some manner. He rejected outright the lightning theory. This particular case was badly muddled by an amateurish investigation and became the center of a totally meaningless controversy. NICAP's final conclusion was that some hoaxsters had hauled a vat of acid out to the field where Snippy was prancing, slit the animal's throat with a scalpel, built a huge tripod with long, heavy poles, and lowered the horse into a vat of acid with block and tackle. Then they picked up their poles and vat and left. Somehow, it is easier to believe that "little green men" did it.

Whoever killed Snippy left an ordinary terrestrial-type thermometer behind.

Another rather circumstantial case took place in Ontario, Canada, early in November 1967. Two young men, Terry Goodmurphy and Steven Grexton, said they encountered a circular object about a hundred feet in diameter on Highway 17, outside of Livingston, Ontario. It was surrounded by an orange glow, they said, and "went down towards the highway, stopped for a while, then came straight up and began traveling towards us. It appeared to be about a hundred feet up." The boys were so frightened that they slammed their car into reverse and backed down the highway in a panic. When officers of the Ontario Provincial Police visited the area, the object was gone, but they noted the smell of sulfur in the air. That same week two horses belonging to Lome Wolgemuth in nearly Sowerby, Ontario, suffered strange cuts. A favorite riding horse, Fury, came to the barn one morning with a long, clean cut on its neck. When a mare, Susie, failed to turn up for breakfast, its owner went searching and found the animal dead in a field with its jugular vein deftly cut. That night, another horse owned by R. Boyer in Thessalon "went wild."

We have collected other animal mutilation cases from

Pennsylvania, Washington, Oregon, Ohio, and West Virginia. In December 1967 another cow was found near Gallipolis, Ohio, with the unkindest cut of all—it had been neatly severed in two "as if it had been chopped in half by a giant pair of scissors." The organs and blood in the lower half had all been removed.

There have probably been thousands of animal mutilitions over the years, but because of their seemingly fragile relationship to the UFO phenomenon, few of them have been directly reported. Such stories rarely make the newspapers. Police often believe they are dealing with a gang of cattle rustlers and deliberately keep complaints buried in their files until they can catch the culprits.

Who can say how many bloodless carcasses are scattered throughout the hills, forests, and fields of America?

It seems that animal blood is not all "they" are after, either.

In the wee hours of a rainy morning early in March 1967, a Red Cross Bloodmobile, laden with freshly collected human blood, was driving along Highway 2 next to the Ohio River, en route to Red Cross headquarters in Huntington, West Virginia. The driver was Beau Shertzer, and he was accompanied by a young nurse. As they hit a completely deserted stretch of road, a large glowing object lifted from a nearby hill and swooped over the vehicle. Shertzer rolled down his side window and looked up. He was horrified to see that some kind of arm or extension was being lowered from the glistening machine cruising only a few feet above the Bloodmobile. The nurse saw another arm reaching down on her side of the truck. It looked as if the flying object was trying to wrap a pincer-like device around the vehicle. The nurse went into hysterics, understandably, and Shertzer opened the engine up wide, trying desperately to outrun the thing. Apparently they were saved by the sudden appearance of headlights from approaching traffic. As the other cars neared, the object retracted the arms and hastily flew off.

To this day Beau Shertzer refuses to drive along that highway.

Was this a case of a UFO making a deliberate attempt to pick up a Bloodmobile and carry it off to some secret place? We can only speculate but it all sounds very ominous.

Some UFO theorists have speculated that terrestrial animal matter is important to the UFOnauts as raw material for the construction of solid physical entities.

An alternative to collecting animal matter for the creation of physical beings would be to enlist the aid of terrestrials sexually for the purpose of crossbreeding and creating a new species that would be neither human nor—whatever "they" are. There are a number of astounding incidents which seem to suggest that such biological experiments are actually taking place.

In occult lore there is a well-known historic phenomenon which has been heavily documented for centuries and has involved thousands of people, both male and female. This phenomenon involves the appearance of nonhuman entities who seduce and have sexual intercourse with their victims. An incubus is a male "demon" who attacks sleeping females and fornicates with them. In many cases these entities return night after night. Such "demon lovers" are discussed in ancient literature and psychiatrists are well familiar with the phenomenon. It seems to extend beyond mere sexual fantasy. There is sometimes physical evidence that the victim has experienced actual intercourse.

One weird case is fully described in a book titled UFO Warning by New Zealander John Stuart. He became obsessed with the UFO phenomenon in the early 1950s and was assisted in his research by an attractive young lady he calls Barbara. After making some close UFO sightings in 1954 and receiving anonymous threatening phone calls ordering them to discontinue their UFO studies, Barbara claimed that she returned home one night to find a foul odor in her apartment. Then she was brutally attacked by a

creature she could not see. She said that it had a skin the texture of sandpaper. It raped her and left her body covered with small scratches. Later both Stuart and the girl saw a weird, loathsome monster with spindly limbs and covered with hair. "It had no hands, the long fingers jutting from the arms like stalks," Stuart wrote.

From time to time cases of this type receive worldwide publicity. A Reuters dispatch from Pretoria, South Africa, examined one such case in April 1968. A widow named Mrs. Anna de la Rovera protested to authorities that her house was haunted. In February 1968 she returned home one evening and found a man dressed in gray sitting on her front porch. When she asked him what he wanted, he "simply stood up and walked into the house through the closed front door." The mysterious stranger appeared frequently after that, often invading her bedroom and "making amorous advances" to her.

"About a month ago after I had gone to bed one night," she told reporters, "I saw a dark apparition coming out of the kitchen. It was covered with long hair, and I particularly remember its long, curved fingernails."

Her children also saw this specter. Mrs. Rovera appealed to the Pretoria City Council for new housing.

The female counterpart of the incubus is known as a succubus; a female entity which materializes in the bedrooms of males and seduces them. The succubus phenomena is very real to priests and monks, and there are innumerable instances in which ravishing ladies supposedly materialized in their cells and tried to lure them into enjoying the sins of the flesh.

Often the appearances of these entities are accompanied by ghost-like manifestations. Objects move of their own accord, pictures are wrenched from walls by unseen hands, and doors open and close by themselves. Busy poltergeists also seem to be

directly linked to the UFO phenomenon, as we shall see further on.

If the UFOnauts are essentially alien but human in form, it might make sense for them to conduct crossbreeding experiments in an effort to produce beings with the full capability of breathing and functioning in the earthly environment. Such experiments have purportedly been going on for several years, although the victims are very reluctant to reveal their identities for perfectly obvious reasons.

In these cases, young men, usually from college communities, are taken aboard the objects and introduced to alien females. A student from a West Virginia college underwent this type of experience in the spring of 1967. Immediately after he was released from the UFO he went to a local hospital and submitted himself to a thorough examination which confirmed his claims. Two young men on Long Island also told me the same kind of story in the summer of 1967. One claimed to have performed as a voluntary breeder several times. He later suffered a spell of amnesia.

The best known case of this type occurred in Brazil in 1957 and was carefully investigated by Dr. Olavo T. Fontes, a prominent physician in Rio and one of the world's leading UFOlogists. Dr. Fontes filed a very long and detailed report with APRO at the time, but since the case was so unusual, it was not publicly revealed until 1966.

The "victim's" name was Antonio Villas Boas, a twenty-three year old farmer in the state of Minas Gerais. He told Dr. Fontes that four small men in gray one-piece suits and helmets took him aboard a saucer-shaped craft late on the night of October 15, 1957. There a sample of blood was extracted from him and he was placed in a chamber containing a couch. Smoke came from vents around the ceiling, he said, and created a gaseous mixture which smelled like "burning oil cloth" and made him sick to his stomach. After he had adjusted somewhat to this new kind of atmosphere,

the door opened and a nude girl entered. She was very pale, short, had high cheekbones, elongated eyes, a very pointed chin, and very thin lips. Her hands were "very long and narrow."

The healthy farmer did what comes naturally. Twice, in fact, he bragged. At the conclusion of the proceedings his strange mate patted her stomach and pointed towards the ceiling. Boas came down with symptoms of radiation poisoning after he was released, and these symptoms were still present when Dr. Fontes examined him a month or so later. Many of the smaller details of his once-utterly preposterous story have now been verified by more recent events in other parts of the world. His description of both the entities and some writing he saw on a door in the craft matches the descriptions of Betty and Barney Hill, the New Hampshire "contactees," and they could not possibly have ever heard of Boas.

Mrs. Hill recalled under hypnosis that a long needle was driven into her navel by the UFOnauts, and Barney complained that some cold instrument was placed over his genitals (he later developed a ring of warts in that region).

One of the American males who told me of having an out-of-this-world sex experience said that the female he met was about five feet two inches tall, spoke little English, and had very thin silvery hair. No nauseous gas was injected into that saucer boudoir but he was given something "thick and syrupy" to drink before he was introduced to the girl.

Dr. Jacques Vallee has researched this type of event in depth, burrowing into the records of the Catholic Church and the demonological literature. Incubi and succubi have traditionally been regarded as manifestations of the devil. In the Celtic countries the "little people" have been credited with bizarre sexual activities often accompanied by hallucinations just as intriguing as the modern stories of hanky-panky aboard flying saucers. "The devil does not have a body," Dr. Vallee writes. "Then, how does he

manage to have intercourse with men and women? . . . All the theologians answer that the devil borrows the corpse of a human being, either male or female, or else he forms with other materials a new body for this purpose."[1]

If there is any validity to this theory, then we can speculate that Boas' strange mate was somehow constructed from the blood which the "spacemen" first extracted from him. In studying percipients who have made similar claims, we have detected factors which indicate that all—or a large part—of what they remembered was a confabulation or dream-like hallucination. While they had a vivid memory of their experiences aboard a flying saucer, it is probable that they actually had a different kind of experience altogether, the memory of which was somehow erased and replaced by a flying saucer illusion.

Our problem is therefore complicated by the necessity for finding a method to get at the forgotten experience. It is futile to record and preserve the endless details in the remembered hallucinations. The seemingly strongest UFO evidence—the landing and contact stories—thus become the weakest links in the chain.

FOURTEEN

The Grinning Man

A BLAZING white light "as big as a car" nearly scraped the 550-foot-tall television tower outside of Pompton Lakes, New Jersey, site of the large DuPont explosives factory, on the night of October 11, 1966. A policeman and his wife watched the object move slowly northward and disappear beyond the neighboring hills.

On the other side of those hills, Sergeant Benjamin Thompson and Patrolman Edward Wester, of the Wanaque Reservoir Police, observed the same light at about 9:45 P.M. as it swooped low over the reservoir. "The light was brilliantly white," Thompson said. "It lit up the whole area for about three hundred yards. In fact, it blinded me when I got out of the patrol car to look at it, and I couldn't see for about twenty minutes afterwards."

Forty miles south of Wanaque, in Elizabeth, New Jersey, two boys had a frightening experience that October 11, at approximately the same time that Officers Thompson and Wester were watching the glowing object cavort above the reservoir. There had been a number of aerial sightings in the vicinity of Elizabeth the previous week, apparently clustered around the New

Jersey Turnpike which slices through that city. New Jersey newspapers from one end of the state to the other were filled with UFO reports during that period.

The two boys, James Yanchitis and Martin "Mouse" Munov, were walking home along Fourth Street and New Jersey Street when they reached a corner parallel to the turnpike. The turnpike is elevated and there is a very steep incline dipping down from the busy thoroughfare to Fourth Street. A very high wire fence runs along the street, making it impossible for anyone to scramble up the incline to the turnpike. There are bright street lights on that particular corner. It was on this corner that the two young men encountered "the strangest guy we've ever seen."

Yanchitis spotted him first. "He was standing behind that fence," the youth said later. "I don't know how he got there. He was the biggest man I ever saw."

"Jimmy nudged me," Mouse reported, "and said, 'Who's that guy standing behind you?' I looked around and there he was . . . behind that fence. Just standing there. He pivoted around and looked right at us . . . and then he grinned a big old grin."

Three days later we visited Elizabeth, accompanied by UFO lecturer James Moseley and actor Chuck McCann. We interviewed the boys separately at length in the home of Mr. George Smythe and they both told the same identical story. The man was over six feet tall, they agreed, and was dressed in a "sparkling green" coverall costume that shimmered and seemed to reflect the street lights. There was a wide black belt around his waist. McCann, who was the star of his own TV series in New York, is a very large man about six feet two inches tall, but both boys said the person they saw was bigger than McCann and much broader. He had a very dark complexion and "little round eyes . . . real beady . . . set far apart." They could not remember seeing any hair, ears, or nose on this figure, nor did they notice his hands. He was standing in the

underbrush behind the fence and his feet were out of sight.

There had been some incidents of violence in the neighborhood, and the boys did not stop to study this strange character. They ran home. Later there were rumors in the area that "a tall green man" had chased a middle-aged resident down the same street that same night. We were unable to track those rumors down.

The big mystery seemed to be: how did this man get behind that fence and what was he doing there? We considered the possibility that it might have been a driver whose car or truck was in trouble on the turnpike overhead but it seemed unlikely that he would have struggled down the very steep embankment and then just stood fixedly behind the fence. He certainly would have called to the boys and asked them to make a phone call for him or fetch help. But the boys seemed convinced that he was just quietly watching a house across the street.

A giant grinning man stood behind a high fence on a street corner in Elizabeth, New Jersey, on the night of a "flap." It hardly proved anything—but we have heard about "the grinning man" over and over again in our travels.

A sewing machine salesman from Mineral Wells, West Virginia, Woodrow Derenberger, was driving home from Marietta, Ohio, on the rainy Wednesday night of November 2, 1966, when an object "shaped like the chimney of a kerosene lamp" dropped out of the sky and landed on the highway directly in front of the West Virginian's truck. Derenberger slammed on his brakes and stared in astonishment as a man emerged from the object and strolled towards him. He described the man as being about six feet tall, with a dark complexion and slightly elongated eyes. He wore a dark coat and blue trousers which were "quite shiny and had a glistening effect."

As the man neared the door of the truck, Derenberger heard a voice ask him to roll down his window. The man stepped up to the

door with his arms crossed over his chest and his hands hidden under his armpits. He grinned fixedly at Derenberger and his lips never moved, yet Derenberger distinctly heard a voice and conversed with this odd gentleman through "mental telepathy." Their discussion was brief and rather pointless. The man said his name was "Cold" and that he was from "a country much less powerful" than the United States. He asked Derenberger who he was, where he was going, and a few other simple questions. Then he said he would be back, returned to the object, and it flew off.

Woodrow Derenberger, who had never read any UFO literature, thus entered the world of the "contactees." A year later he had divorced his wife after having changed jobs and addresses several times and having repeatedly changed his unlisted phone number. Finally, in December 1967 he fled to another state and hid for several months, during which time he married another "contactee"—a girl many years his junior.

We have interviewed Derenberger several times and have appeared on Long John Nebel's radio show with him. Gray Barker, publisher of Saucer News, accompanied us on our first trek to Mineral Wells, and that night we saw some small lights bobbing around in a field behind Woody's house. Being intrepid UFO investigators, we went into the field to take a closer look. Woody, unfortunately, had failed to tell us two things—both rather important. First, the fence around the field was electrified. We discovered this quickly enough and went sailing over it into a large mud puddle. Our sudden flight discouraged Gray from trying to climb the fence. A few minutes later we learned that there was a very bad-tempered bull in that field. Our years as bullfight afficionados in Spain came in handy. Instead of trying to outrun the bull, we stood our ground, flashed our flashlight in his unhappy face, and bluffed him long enough to stage a dignified retreat.

We never did find out what those little lights were. Derenberger claimed they were being projected from "Cold's ship" somewhere overhead. According to his complicated story, "Indrid Cold" and his friends frequently visited the farm, often arriving by automobile, for long, friendly chats. Innumerable witnesses did see strange unidentified objects throughout the area and quite frequently directly above Woody's house.

The night of his first contact, two other men also reported identical incidents to the Parkersburg police. We eventually tracked them down and spoke to them (they were not from Parkersburg). They confirmed our information but said they did not want their names used. "We don't want to get involved," one of them said flatly.

Woody, however, agreed to a press conference and appeared on radio and TV. The local NICAP subcommittee zeroed in on him, urging him to tell his story to no one but NICAP. He voluntarily submitted to an extensive physical and psychiatric examination arranged by NICAP. A leading local psychiatrist conducted the tests. NICAP was nonplussed when the psychiatrist himself became a "contactee" a month later and now admits to both person-to-person confrontations and telepathic communications with the UFO entities. While he talks freely about these contacts and his claims conform to all of the patterns, he naturally does not want his name used. But he has talked anonymously on radio programs and backed Derenberger to the hilt.

There were many other "contactees" in the Ohio Valley area, most of whom were completely unknown to Woody. Only Derenberger's story of November 2 received any publicity (the wire services circulated it nationwide), but his later experiences are not even known to the hard-core UFOlogists. It is certainly startling when "contactees" hundreds of miles from West Virginia recite details identical to the things Woody had told us privately.

Derenberger is not a learned man. "Indrid Cold" and his funny companions told him they were from a planet called "Lanulos" which was in "the galaxy of Genemedes." (Actually Ganymede is a large satellite of the planet Jupiter.) Woody claims that he has been there and visited a number of cities where the people wear "colorful shorts" and all signs, posters, etc. appear to be written in a squiggly Oriental-like writing. The air and the temperature are identical to Earth's.

We stopped by to see Woody again in the spring of 1967 and found him hiding behind drawn curtains, trying to avoid the hundreds of UFO believers, skeptics, and the just plain curious who invaded his property every night and every weekend.

Sixty miles south of Parkersburg, in the little town of Point Pleasant, hundreds of people were quietly living in fear. About seven miles north of the town there is an expansive World War II ammunition dump known locally as the TNT Area. This consists of several hundred wooded acres filled with concrete domes used to store explosives manufactured at nearby plants. Residents of this thinly populated sector have been seeing strange things in the sky and on the ground since the summer of 1966.

One family in particular, Mr. and Mrs. James Lilly and their children, have had the full range of UFO activities around their home on Camp Conley Road, just south of the TNT Area. They first began seeing low-flying luminous objects early in March 1967 but kept their sightings to themselves for several weeks. Mr. Lilly, a no-nonsense riverboat captain on the Ohio, was skeptical at first and tried to figure out a rational explanation.

"It didn't take us long to learn that when our TV started acting up it was a sure sign that one of those lights was passing over," Jim Lilly told us that April. "I didn't think much of all the flying saucer talk until I started seeing them myself. You've got to believe your own eyes."

Automobiles in the vicinity of the Lilly home began to display an odd tendency to stall without cause. By mid-April the word had leaked out that the "Martians" were visiting Camp Conley Road every night and carloads of teenagers and adults swarmed over the area. Few were disappointed. Reporters, policemen, and Mason County Sheriff George Johnson were among the countless witnesses.

"We've seen all kinds of things," Mrs. Lilly said. "Blue lights, green ones, red ones, things that change color. Some of them have been so low that we thought we could see diamond-shaped windows in them. And none of them make any noise at all."

During our in-depth interview with all the members of the Lilly family we uncovered a number of significant incidents which had seemed totally unrelated to UFOs. In the fall of 1966 the Lillys started hearing odd noises around their little ranchhouse. They did not discuss these things outside their family, but they wondered if their home had not suddenly become haunted. Kitchen cabinet doors slammed in the middle of the night. Mrs. Lilly heard sounds "like a baby crying." "It sounded so plain," she said, "that I looked around the house even though I knew there was no baby here. It seemed to come from the living room . . . only a few feet away from me."

Their daughter-in-law, Mrs. Doris Lilly, who lived in the south end of Point Pleasant, began to receive strange phone calls early in March 1967. Each evening around 5:00 P.M. her phone would ring, and when she answered she heard only a bizarre metallic voice speaking in an incomprehensible language. It was guttural and rapid. These calls came only when she was alone.

"It was as if they knew when I came home," she noted.

The same thing happened night after night. Finally she was afraid to stay alone in the little bungalow. The phone company examined her lines and could not explain the calls.

Part of our investigative routine includes a discussion of the witnesses dreams during the "flap" periods. And one of our carefully phrased key question is: "Did you ever dream there was a stranger in the house in the middle of the night?" When we directed this question at the Lillys, Mrs. Lilly urged her quiet sixteen-year-old daughter, Linda, to tell about the nightmare she had had that March. Linda was reluctant to discuss it, but with a little coaching from the sidelines she told how she woke up one night and saw a large figure towering over her bed.

"It was a man," she said. "A big man. Very broad. I couldn't see his face very well but I could see that he was grinning at me."

"Jim was working on the river," Mrs. Lilly added. "And Linda woke me up with a terrible scream. She cried out there was a man in her room. I told her she was dreaming. But she screamed again."

"He walked around the bed and stood right over me," Linda declared. "I screamed again and hid under the covers. When I looked up again, he was gone."

"She came running into my room," Mrs. Lilly said. "She said, 'There is a man in my room! There is!' She's refused to sleep alone ever since."

When we asked for a full description of this man, Linda said she thought he had been wearing "a checkered shirt."

Occult literature is filled with references to ghosts wearing "checkered shirts" but the occultists tend to skip over this seemingly irrelevant detail.

Completely unknown to the Lilly family, the "man in the checkered shirt" had appeared frequently in the home of Mr. and Mrs. George Glines of Pensacola, Florida, starting around 1963. During a hurricane that year Mr. Glines said, "I was lying on the couch in the living room with just one dim light on. I had the feeling that someone was in the room and looked up and saw a heavily built man about six feet tall wearing a plaid sports shirt.

"I got up and took a couple of steps toward him. As I did, it looked like he took a step backward and disappeared. I turned on the light and he was gone. I checked the doors, and they were all locked. I didn't mention it until my son-in-law saw it, because I didn't want to upset my wife."

The Glines son-in-law, James Boone, revealed that the man had turned up in his bedroom in the same house. "I saw a large man," he said, "a laboring type person, standing at the foot of the bed. I couldn't see his face. When I started to get up, he went away."

Several witnesses heard knockings on the wall of the living room. They finally tore the wall out but could find nothing unusual. George, Jr., then only two years old, began to talk about his friend Puki, whom he described as a very big man in a colorful shirt. Mrs. Glines reported that little George "told me that he couldn't see Puki's face. It wasn't clear."

Several relatives and friends heard footsteps in the house when there was no one there. In May 1964 the home burned to the ground. "Puki doesn't like the house all burned," little George told his mother. "But he said he would come back when it was fixed up."

Burning houses and mysterious fires go hand in hand with the UFO mystery. The sudden destruction of witnesses' homes has been so frequent that mere coincidence must be ruled out.

A "contactee" in New Mexico, Paul Villa, part Indian, had his little home burn to the ground soon after he released some photographs he had taken of UFOs hovering low over his land. In West Virginia an abandoned building in the TNT Area burned to the ground in the midst of a pouring rain, much to the bewilderment of the local fire department. Grass fires often erupt in empty fields hours or days after a UFO has reportedly touched down there.

In some cases the fires might occur weeks or months before the

UFO activity begins, as in the case of Mrs. Bryant, the Ohio woman mentioned earlier. The home of the Jaros-law family at Lake St. Clair, Michigan, was gutted by fire two years before Grant Jaroslaw and his brother Dan took some controversial UFO photographs over the lake on January 10, 1967. The family continued to live in the basement of the burned-out house, and when UFO investigators later tried to check into the story behind the pictures they found that the Jaroslaws had changed their unlisted phone number twice and refused to discuss the photos any further. Air Force Major Raymond Nyls, operations officer at the nearby Selfridge Air Force Base, told the press, "These are the most amazing flying saucer pictures I've ever seen. You can even make out some sort of tail and antenna on the back." Dr. J. Allen Hynek stated that he thought the pictures were authentic. But the Jaroslaws became incommunicado. Why? What kind of nightmare were they actually living?

From Cape Cod, Massachusetts, to the tip of Florida, we have heard of unidentified prowlers roaming the countryside at night. In Point Pleasant, West Virginia, strange unearthly faces peered into the windows of homes—windows too high for ordinary men to reach. In 1968 farmers in New York's Delaware County were chasing a giant, broad-shouldered grinning man with an unruly shock of silver hair. He was over six feet tall and when pursued he displayed remarkable agility, making impossible leaps across wide ditches. Witnesses, some of whom claimed face-to-face confrontations with him, said he had small eyes and a fixed grin. A similar, if not identical, giant prowler appeared repeatedly in Provincetown, Massachusetts, in 1966–67.

The most recent case of this type comes from Springdale, Arkansas. At 11:00 P.M. on September 6, 1969, a man stared into the bedroom window of Mrs. Barbara Robinson. She called police and Officer Ken Speedlin "discovered that anyone who looked through

the bedroom window would have to have been at least seven feet tall . . . There was nothing in the area of the window on which a prowler could have stood."[1]

In the spring of 1966, an Air Force WAF returned to her ground-floor apartment on the edge of McGuire Air Force Base in New Jersey, one evening and heard a sound in her bedroom. She went to investigate and found her window open and a pair of very pale hands with extraordinarily long fingers resting on the windowsill, as if a man were about to climb in. She screamed and the hands withdrew. She found the Air Police and they searched the area. Later they told her that they had seen and pursued a prowler—a very tall man "with his sweater pulled up over his head." This WAF, a master sergeant whom we have known for fifteen years, was puzzled by our interest in this "sweater" detail. We asked her if she had ever seen any monk-like figures, and she recounted an incredible incident which she had almost completely forgotten.

Several years before she had been staying in a motel in Mexico when she woke up one night to find a giant cowled figure standing over her bed. Not a man in a checkered shirt, but a being in a monk's robe. It extended one arm above her, she said, and she reached out to touch it. The second her fingers touched the arm the whole thing crumbled and disappeared. "It felt powdery, like ashes," she explained.

What have "powdery ghosts" got to do with flying saucers?

Such stories are not uncommon, and in several cases the objects themselves have reportedly disintegrated into powder when struck. On August 18, 1966, a disk-shaped object discharged some pieces of flaming metal directly over some telephone poles near Lions Lake, New Jersey. The witnesses retrieved some of this substance which proved to be a honeycombed, aluminum-like casting. Although they stored it carefully in a jewel box, it rapidly

disintegrated, shrinking to the size of a pea. Since a thorough chemical analysis can cost upwards of one thousand dollars the metal has never been tested.

Large, broad-shouldered men wearing capes and hoods have been seen all over the world, usually walking along desolate roads in thinly populated areas. Like many of the other creatures and characters involved in this mystery, they have an uncanny habit of disappearing without a trace. In October 1967 three men were driving along Route 2 in West Virginia when they saw a large, caped man walking beside the road. They stopped and looked back and he was gone. There were open fields on both sides of the road.

A group of eight men wearing thick black cowls startled motorists near Caterham, England, on July 28, 1963. Witnesses said that the mystery men departed by "running and leaping across the road . . . Their actions were silent and most odd."

Mr. Jerome Clark, a leading American UFOlogist, sent us the following report in March 1967:

> "I have been told of two similar cases in Minnesota . . . The first incident occurred last April. According to what the witness told me, he and a friend had been driving along the highway about 11:30 P.M. They were miles from the nearest town and they could not see any other cars on the road; since the land in northwestern Minnesota is very flat, their visibility was almost unlimited. So they were understandably shocked and surprised when in their headlights they caught three large men walking abreast and toward them from the other lane of the highway. The men were dressed in black cowls that covered the upper half of their faces; there were slits for the eyes. The strangers, whoever or whatever they were,

paid no attention to the car and continued on as if it had never passed.

The second incident allegedly occurred here in Canby [Minnesota] several years ago. An acquaintance of mine was taking a short cut home through an alley several blocks from where I live. He was not paying any particular attention to the direction he was going and almost walked into another person in the alley. The stranger seemed quite startled and turned to stare in surprise. The man was very tall and massive and was dressed in a black cape that covered the top half of his face; he seemed to be carrying something that resembled a large black bag.

Perhaps these are the same kind of entities frequently reported as ghosts around deserted monasteries and seminaries. Certainly if you saw one of these characters stalking through a cemetery and disappearing suddenly into thin air you would report it as a ghost —if you reported it at all.

The Paraphysical Laboratory in Downton, Wiltshire, England, carefully records all of the paranormal and supernatural events in England and issues an annual Classified Directory of Spontaneous Phenomena. Their 1968 directory includes many incidents which could be catalogued as either ghost sightings or UFO sightings. For example, on the evening of Saturday, September 21, 1968, Mr. E. Bennett and his fifteen-year-old daughter were returning to their Whipsnade, Kent home when at the bottom of Bison Hill a conical-shaped mass rose slowly out from field about twenty-five yards in front of them. It was six feet tall, they said, with a glowing aura surrounding it and it seemed to vanish into a solid, impenetrable hedge.[2]

Mr. Sidney Webb of Pulham Market, Norfolk, reported that he

was walking home along Mill Lane in February 1968 when he saw a tall luminous shape glide from an entrance in a hedge, travel slowly along the road, and then disappear. It was about half the height of a telephone pole.

In Otley, Yorkshire, four young girls were taking a short cut home past a churchyard in January 1968 when a tall, dark shape appeared. Though they were very close to it, they could not discern its face and despite the frosty weather no breath came from the figure. One of the girls screamed but the figure took no notice and walked away with no sound of footsteps.

The Church House Inn in Torbryan, Devonshire, is said to be haunted for a "ghost" dressed like a monk has been seen there, and all kinds of strange sounds, manifestations, and power failures have taken place there in recent years.

Are ghosts really UFOs and UFO entities, or are UFOs really ghosts? Take your choice. In July 1968 three schoolboys in Cumberland, England, were camping out when they saw a bright UFO-type light bobbing and weaving over the barren hills of nearby Cumberland Fells. One of the lads, Owen Moran, had a camera and snapped some pictures. When the film was developed everyone was amazed to find that the object appeared as a pale light resembling the head of a woman in profile, wearing a bonnet or cloak tied under the chin!

From Malvern, Arkansas, to Mill Lane in Norfolk, strange and inexplicable things have been roaming freely and with a minimum of public notice. They walk through walls and solid hedges, appear and disappear at random and without apparent purpose. Other men in hoods and cloaks stroll the moors of Scotland and the plains of Minnesota, traveling about on mysterious missions in isolated places late at night. Still others step out of unearthly flying objects to chat idly with passing motorists.

Who are these "people?"

FIFTEEN

The Bedroom Invaders

THE MAN in the checkered shirt seems to be just another variation on a phenomenon well known to those who delve into the psychic and occult world. Bizarre bedroom phantoms are commonplace everywhere in the world, although they are seldom reported; the published material represents only a trifling residue. When we discovered that many sane, sober UFO witnesses were receiving visits from these bedroom apparitions immediately after (or, sometimes, immediately before; their UFO experiences, we turned our attention to the great mass of neglected reports of this nature. We also interviewed psychiatrists and doctors who have maintained a peripheral interest in the phenomenon. Detailed medical studies of the overall problem seem to be nonexistent. There is no clinical explanation for these manifestations. But some psychiatrists, such as L. J. Reyna of Boston University, tend to link them with schizophrenia. Mr. Michael Maccoby, in his introduction to Operators and Things by Barbara O'Brien remarks, "Barbara's hallucinations are not, however, the gods and devils common to another age; they are the horrors of Organization Man; they are

reactions to forces blocking attempts at creativity in work and attempts to enjoy relationships of trust with others." Miss O'Brien's book is the account of her real and hallucinatory experiences after the bedroom invaders entered her life.

She begins the book:

> Let us say that when you awake tomorrow, you find standing at your bedside a man with purple scale-skin who tells you that he has just arrived from Mars, that he is studying the human species, and that he has selected your mind for the kind of on-the-spot examination he wants to make . . . It is possible that the Man from Mars may actually disappear within a few days or a few weeks. There is about a .05 per cent chance of this happening. You are physically exhausted after the Man has gone back to Mars, and your mind, which had been racing like a jet plane while the Man was with you, slows down and almost refuses to function at all.

She was, of course, describing some of the common physical and psychological reactions to UFO contact. Because the UFO buffs themselves have been actively ridiculing and suppressing such contacts no proper medical studies have ever been undertaken, and we know practically nothing about the medical aspects. A very important clue to the whole monster/UFO/ghost phenomena may be buried in these cases. Millions of people have been affected at least temporarily by UFO contact. Thousands have gone insane and ended up in mental institutions after their experiences with these things began. It is scandalous that the only full psychological study of a "contactee" case was carried out by a Swiss psychologist in the 1890s and published in 1900.[1]

In the past three years we have published two popular magazine

articles on these bedroom invaders and we were amazed by the amount of mail those pieces drew. Many readers wrote to tell us, sometimes in absorbing detail, of their own experiences with this uncanny phenomenon. In most cases these experiences were not repetitive. They happened only once and were not accompanied by any other manifestations. In several cases the witnesses experienced total paralysis of the body. The witness awoke but was unable to move a muscle while the apparition was present. As we have already pointed out, this very same kind of akinesia has occurred in many UFO landing cases. It is a slender thread, perhaps, on which to hang a theory, but we do have more than enough data now to suspect that both the UFO and bedroom experiences are unreal visions and hallucinations induced while in a half-awake state. Such visions could possibly be created by some kind of hypnotic process or by waves of electromagnetic energy which beam thoughts and impressions directly to the brain. This would mean that the experience was not entirely subjective but was caused by some inexplicable outside influence.

The mind is unquestionably involved in many UFO and psychic experiences, and, very probably, in a number of our more bizarre monster sightings. Thus we only see what the phenomenon wants us to see and we only remember what it wants us to remember. If this is eventually proven then a large part of our descriptive data is completely false and worthless, and all the charming stories we have recounted here do not mean a thing.

Back in 1954, UFO buffs were enraged when the subject of flying saucers was brought up at a White House press conference and President Eisenhower stated flatly that UFOs existed only in the minds of the witnesses, implying that the whole business was hallucinatory.

Hallucinations would not, however, account for the many radar sightings, photographs, and landing events which left physical

evidence on the ground.

The buffs tend to lump everything hopelessly together and try only to categorize the descriptions of the objects which are, as we pointed out earlier, so varied that the data negates itself. We must, to be successful, turn our attention to studying the witnesses and the psychological and physiological effects they experience. The answer to the whole mystery probably lies in that direction, not in the stars.

The late Sir Arthur Conan Doyle, creator of Sherlock Holmes, was an avid investigator of psychic phenomena and in his book The Edge of the Unknown (1930), he described a personal experience with nocturnal akinesia. "It was in my bedroom in Crowborough," Sir Arthur wrote. "I awakened in the night with the clear consciousness that there was someone in the room and that the presence was not of this world. I was lying with my back to the room, acutely awake, but utterly unable to move. It was physically impossible for me to turn my body and face this visitor. I heard measured steps across the room. I was conscious (without seeing it) that someone was bending over me, and then I heard a voice saying in a loud whisper, 'Doyle, I come to tell you that I am sorry.' A minute later my disability disappeared, and I was able to turn, but all was black darkness and perfectly still. My wife had not awakened, and knew nothing of what had passed."

A man in Phoenix, Arizona, wrote to tell us about waking at 1:00 A.M. on February 26, 1968, because of a sharp knock on his door.

"I saw a man standing in my room at some distance," he reported, "wearing dark clothing . . . I couldn't see his face . . . he was slender and not tall, perhaps five feet nine. He changed position a few times . . . and then he was gone."

On May 25, 1968, another young man reported that he woke up in his bedroom in Superior, Wisconsin, and saw a huge shape standing over the bed. "It appeared to be almost six feet six inches

tall," he said. "A massive head with huge broad shoulders is the only way I can describe it. It moved from the right side of the bed to the left and then disappeared."

In some cases these apparitions are accompanied by vile odors (hydrogen sulfide again?) and the witnesses often get out of bed and search the house trying in vain to locate the source of the smell. In other cases physical sensations occur. A woman in Maine reported being awakened one night by a slap on her face. She looked up and saw a group of dark figures standing around her bed, staring at her. She sat up and tried to talk to them. A visiting neighbor was staying with her that night and the talking woke her up. The neighbor saw nothing.

A man in the same area (the witnesses have, unfortunately, requested anonymity in these strange cases) claimed that he was dozing in his locked car outside the plant where he works when he awoke to find his loaded revolver on the seat beside him, aimed at him cocked, and ready to fire. A black form was hovering over him. He said he could not figure out whether the phantom was trying to shoot him or save him.

There is still another curious aspect to all of these visions. The phenomenon seems to be "reflective." It zeros in on people who become interested in almost any esoteric subject. There are all kinds of cultists and buffs in the United States, advocating all kinds of bizarre beliefs. Most of these groups have little or no contact with each other. The quiet groups still investigating and researching the assassination of President Kennedy have been suffering strange harassments identical to those experienced by UFO buffs and psychic researchers. Their telephones go haywire (electromagnetic phenomena?), they are followed by mysterious automobiles and suspicious Oriental-looking gentlemen. Their mail gets fouled up. Students of witchcraft, members of fanatical religious groups, and even members of civil rights movements and

both right and left wing political groups all become victims of this harassment. And each group tries to find a cause or culprit to explain it—the most popular being the CIA or the FBI. Actually, thousands of people are undergoing this kind of harassment continually and no government agency is big enough, has enough personnel or a big enough budget to be the blame for all these incidents. Nor would any responsible government agency be motivated to spend a fortune to harass teen-aged UFO buffs and little old ladies collecting clippings about John F. Kennedy.

We have investigated dozens of harassment events in depth and have been collecting and studying identical reports from many of the other groups mentioned above. The same techniques are employed, and it is now apparent that we cannot blame the Communists, the Martians or the CIA. Some of these events are, of course, purely subjective; that is, as the researcher mires himself deeper and deeper into his subject, he begins to misinterpret many ordinary coincidences and easily explained events. To a UFO buff, every black Cadillac becomes a CIA vehicle spying on him. Those same black Cadillacs hold Communist spies or agents of the Ku Klux Klan, depending on the cult that looks at them.

In earlier times phantom horsemen were prevalent in the ghost stories. Today mysterious automobiles that have the uncomfortable talent for appearing and disappearing suddenly into thin air have replaced them. The phenomenon, it would seem, is keeping pace with our technological development.

In 1969, a seemingly sensible young man in Massachusetts developed an interest in UFOs and began investigating cases in his area. Soon he was seeing mysterious men at every turn. Black Cadillacs containing sinister-looking types parked in front of his suburban home, apparently studying him. At first he made an effort to record all these events and investigate them logically. But then it began to affect him, and he suffered fits of paranoia and

schizophrenia. We sent a highly qualified psychiatrist to examine this researcher, and the doctor found the young man sitting near his kitchen door with a loaded shotgun, "waiting for the Men in Black." Finally, the poor fellow developed an hallucination—an alligator with antennae which followed him wherever he went. This was all a part of the "reflective" aspect and a demonstration of how the human mind sometimes crumbles when faced with the unknown and the inexplicable.

In Coventry, England, a UFO investigator named Brian Leathley-Andrew terminated his UFO activities after suffering a series of bizarre experiences in the fall of 1968. One October evening he was returning home when he encountered this: "I was by myself. Suddenly I noticed a man standing by the next-door garage. Nobody had been there before. His face was glowing orange and as I watched, the face changed to that of an old man before my eyes. You could not describe the first face in normal terms. It had eyes, nose, and mouth in the proper places but not of the shape that we associate with the human figure."

Soon after this entity vanished, Mr. Leathley-Andrew began to experience strange problems with his telephone. "Every time I tried to speak to someone on this subject," he told the Coventry Evening Telegraph (December 3, 1968), "the phone went dead. Since I have given it up I do not have any trouble."

He also had problems with local power failures and threatening phone calls. Identical things have frequently happened to UFO researchers throughout the United States and in Canada. We have hundreds of cases in our files. Could all of this be the work of random practical jokers or of the CIA? We think not.

Author Gustav Davidson devoted several years of his life to the study of angels—not UFOs or Communist conspiracies. But angels. In 1967 he published a very comprehensive Dictionary of Angels. In the introduction to that work he mentions some of his

experiences with this "reflective" factor:

> At this stage of the quest I was literally bedeviled by angels. They stalked and leaguered me, by night and day. I could not tell the evil from the good . . . I moved, indeed, in a twilight zone of tall presences . . . I remember one occasion—it was winter and getting dark—returning home from a neighboring farm. I had cut across an unfamiliar field. Suddenly a nightmarish shape loomed up in front of me, barring my progress. After a paralyzing moment I managed to fight my way past the phantom. The next morning I could not be sure whether I had encountered a ghost, an angel, a demon, or God. There were other such moments and other such encounters, when I passed from terror to trance, from intimations of realms unguessed at to the uneasy conviction that, beyond the reach of our senses, beyond the arch of all our experience sacred and profane, there was only—to use an expression of Paul's in I Timothy 4—"fable and endless genealogy."

The most fearsome monsters of all may inhabit the dark corners of our minds waiting for us to release them through our beliefs and gullibility. The phenomenon feeds on fear and belief; sometimes it destroys us altogether, other times it leads us upwards into the labyrinth of electromagnetic frequencies which form a curtain between us and some other unperceived reality. From time to time the playful inhabitants of that other world climb through the curtain in the areas we call "windows," and they stalk us to drink our blood and create all kinds of mischievous beliefs and misconceptions in our feeble little terrestrial minds.

In the end the sad truth that may set us free could very well be

that the phantasmagorical world constructed by generations of occultists, religionists, UFO buffs, and monster hunters does not really exist at all. We have merely been led to think that it exists. Something else obviously does exist.

That something else is driving a lot of us nuts.

SIXTEEN

Winged Weirdos

THERE ARE creatures which can fly on wings too short to support their bulbous bodies. We call them bumblebees. Tiny hummingbirds can hover, shift into reverse, and execute other remarkable manuevers patently impossible for such tiny creatures. You have seen pictures and movies about these foolish fliers and you know they exist. Your old high school science teacher told you about the spiders who spin a parachute-like strand and fly for miles with the breeze. And, as we have already pointed out, there are also flying squirrels, flying snakes, flying fish, and even, perhaps, flying cats.

Our skies seem to be inhabited by a variety of Unbelievables, including a thing that looks like a man with wings. Since no Type B scientist has bothered to study our flying man homo avis, the "bird man," Mr. Homo Avis is probably responsible for many of the "angel" stories of the past two thousand years. Surprisingly these winged men seem to have some tenuous relationship with flying saucers. Perhaps they, too, are part of the bewildering UFO phenomenon. Or maybe they attract UFOs for some reason, just as

UFO activity seems to increase in areas where the hairy humanoids appear.

There are two known Unbelievables that could offer an explanation for the homo avis sightings. Unfortunately one may be nothing more than an old Indian legend, and the other is a creature which has been extinct since the Mesozoic period—approximately 9 million years ago. It was not really a bird; it was a giant reptile with great leathery wings. Reconstructions from fossils indicate that it had a wingspread up to twenty feet. It is known as the Pterodactyl.

The Indian legend told of a gigantic bird called the "Thunderbird." It is a name that has been immortalized by an automobile, a resort hotel, and a wine.

The best description of a Pterodactyl appeared in the Illustrated London News (February 9, 1856). Here is that fascinating account in its entirety:

> A discovery of great scientific importance has just been made at Culmout (Haute Marne). Some men employed in cutting a tunnel to unite the St. Dizier and Nancy Railways, had just thrown down an enormous block of stone by means of gunpowder, and were in the act of breaking it to pieces, when from a cavity in it they suddenly saw emerge a living being of monstrous form.
>
> This creature, which belongs to the class of animals hitherto considered to be extinct, has a very long neck, and a mouth filled with sharp teeth. It stands on four long legs, which are united together by two membranes, doubtless intended to support the animal in the air, and are armed with four claws terminated by long and crooked talons. Its general form resembles that of a bat, differing only in its size, which is that of a large goose.

> Its membranous wings, when spread out, measure from tip to tip three metres twenty-two centimetres [nearly ten feet seven inches]. Its color is a livid black; its skin is naked, thick and oily; its intestines only contained a colorless liquid like clear water. On reaching the light this monster gave some signs of life, by shaking its wings, but soon after expired, uttering a hoarse cry. This strange creature, to which may be given the name of a living fossil, has been brought to Gray, where a naturalist well versed in the study of paleontology, immediately recognized it as belonging to the genus Pterodactyl anas, many fossil remains of which have been found among the strata which geologists have designated by the name Lias. The rock in which this monster was discovered belongs precisely to that formation the deposit of which is so old that geologists date it more than a million years back. The cavity in which the animal was lodged forms an exact hollow mold of its body, which indicates that it was completely enveloped with a sedimentary deposit.

Did a Pterodactyl the size of a goose actually stagger out of a tunnel in France, shake its wings and die at the feet of astounded workmen? Charles Fort, Robert Ripley, and several other authors and collectors of trivia have repeatedly enthralled their readers with the story. It turns up every few years in the magazines devoted to the strange and the supernatural. One of our researchers supplied us with a photostat of the story from the original source and we spent several days wading through musty books from the period, trying to find some other reference to it. A discovery of this kind should have elicited great excitement in the scientific journals of the period. The carcass of the beast should have been carefully stuffed and mounted in some museum for all the world

to see. Instead, the scientific world greeted the news with stony silence.

There are, of course, innumerable stories about frogs and other small animals found encased in stone and concrete for years and springing to life again upon liberation. Vampire bats have been found during hibernation, hanging upside down in their caves and covered with ice from dripping water. But when the thaw comes they revive, none the worse.

Several years ago, scientists in the museum in Cairo, Egypt, put some dry palms found in ancient tombs into vats of water and were amazed when the water was soon alive with tiny insects that had, apparently, been in a dehydrated state of suspended animation for three thousand years.

So it is possible for some creatures, particularly coldblooded reptiles like the Pterodactyl, to hibernate for very long periods of time. But 9 million years!

Five years after the appearance of the Illustrated London News story, the discovery of a fossilized feather in Germany set off a scientific uproar. Workmen at a stone quarry in Solenhofen unearthed some peculiar bird-like indentations in a bed of chalky slate. Feathers and fossilized bone fragments stunned the paleontologists, for it had long been assumed that no feathered creatures had existed during that particular period. A gentleman by the name of A. Wagner decided to call the creature Gryphosaurus, after the legendary Greek myth of the gryphon (griffin). Eventually, however it was identified as the Archaeopteryx, one of the earliest known feathered fliers from the Mesozoic Age, which had teeth and lizard-like claws.

Another group of bird fossils were found in the Solenhofen quarry in 1872. These seemed to represent a somewhat smaller bird (the Archaeopteryx was the size of a pullet), also with teeth. The remains of teethed-bird have also been found in Kansas in the

Mesozoic layers.

The Solenhofen finds generated considerable comment in scientific publications and launched a controversy that raged for several years. Scientists rarely agree on anything anyway and they certainly did not appreciate the discovery of a winged creature with feathers from a period when no such creature was supposed to exist.

If a fossilized feather could cause such a stir, then we must ask why the alleged French Pterodactylus anas was ignored. The answer may be that some announcement of an earlier find came from Solenhofen, Germany, (fossils of ancient plants were discovered in the same quarry) and some loyal French journalist, determined not to be outdone by the historic enemy across the border, decided to give France an even more glorious discovery. The Pterodactyl did not stumble out of a block of stone, but came, instead, from a fertile mind in Paris.

However, some of our dragon lore could be based upon the occasional appearances of Pterodactyls in earlier times. The dragon phenomenon is tremendously complex. Detailed dragon stories can be found in ancient Chinese records, and almost identical stories appear in the literature of northern Europe. These accounts can be mapped out on a "dragon belt" which stretched from Japan to England and Ireland. Strangely, myth-ridden India was completely bypassed. It seems that the dragon route was further north, north of the Himalayas. Some of the ancient Chinese paintings and statues of dragons bear a remarkable resemblance to the descriptions of the dragons that once haunted England. Since there was no commerce or information exchange between these two widely separated areas in ancient times, this astounding coincidence might be evidence that dragons actually existed.

During one long period nearly everything seen in the sky was identified as a dragon, although much of the lore describes what

were obviously UFO-type lights rather than living creatures. The dragon was said to inhabit caves, and it was most often described as a winged reptile of some sort. A number of the descriptions sound like Pterodactyls while others sound like snakes with wings. The fire-spitting dragon of modern children's stories may be based upon a combination of UFO manifestations and the winged reptiles. The Egyptian phoenix, the Greek draconta, the basilisk and the gryphon may all have been variations of the same creature. Surviving paintings and reliefs from many cultures depict a reptilian creature with an alligator-type head bearing a mouth filled with sharp teeth and leathery bat-like wings. The Chinese, in particular, seemed to identify glowing cigar-shaped objects as dragons, while the Egyptians and Europeans were more concerned with the ferocious flying monsters which popped out of caves periodically to terrify the population.

We originally planned to write a detailed dragon section for this book but after wading through such books as The Evolution of the Dragon by G. Elliot Smith (1919), The Chinese Dragon by L. N. Hayes (1923), and many other scholarly works, we conceded that we had bitten off more than we could comfortably chew. The only way to summarize it all is to conclude that some Pterodactyl type creature may have survived well into 2,000 B.C. and that its appearances, coupled with UFO phenomena, created a mass of folklore. When the dragons finally died out, people continued to see them anyway, misidentifying large snakes and birds for the earlier creatures. In addition, anomalous paraphysical creatures were frequently seen throughout the Middle Ages, many of them similar to our Abominable Swamp Slobs, and these were nearly always identified as dragons. It would take years of hard work to sift all of the dragon material, categorize it properly, and arrive at some responsible conclusions.

One modern traveler in Africa claims to have heard about a

living Pterodactyl. In his article "Do Extinct Animals Still Survive," published in Popular Science back in 1959, Everett H. Ortner relates the following:

> . . . Frank H. Melland heard from the natives of Northern Rhodesia of a fierce creature that lived in a nearby Jiundu swamp—like a bird, but not exactly a bird; more like a lizard with wings of skin like a bat's.
>
> Melland noted this down, but only later did he realize its hair-raising implications. Then he renewed his questioning. The beast's wing span, they said, was between four and seven feet; it had no feathers at all; its skin was bare and smooth; its beak was full of teeth.
>
> Melland was staggered. What he had was a complete description of a pterodactyl—a giant flesh-eating flying dragon known only to paleontologists, and supposedly extinct for tens of millions of years.
>
> When Melland showed the natives pictures of a reconstruction of a pterodactyl, they nodded and muttered excitedly: "Konamato!"

It is not very likely that Pterodactyls are still crawling occasionally out of ancient caves to glide over Coney Island and terrify the citizens of the Ohio valley. But some winged Unbelievable has been doing this.

Could it be the mighty Thunderbird?

Indian tribes from Mexico to Alaska hand down ancient stories about a bird so huge that it darkened the sun when it flew over. There have been a few scattered modern reports of some flying behemoth buzzing isolated ranches in the southwestern United States but these have been reported in fragments and very poorly investigated, when investigated at all. As with most of these

stories, we are faced with a series of possible explanations.

1. The stories are pure myth and legend and have no basis in fact.
2. The actual phenomenon was misjudged and misinterpreted by the observer(s). Thus, an Indian who wandered too close to a nest was attacked by an angry eagle, and when he retold the story later and it was repeated by others, the size of the bird grew . . . and grew.
3. Some of these stories were based upon appearances of UFOs. Since the Indians could not conceive of any machine-like object in the air, they interpreted it as being some kind of great bird.

The Thunderbird is supposed to have had a wingspread of twenty or thirty feet and enjoyed dining on small children and old people who could not run fast enough to get away. As the name implies, the bird was often accompanied by a thunderous noise—a factor which lends some credence to explanation 3.

A fourth possibility is that a dragon-like creature may have existed on the North American continent in early times and that the Thunderbird stories were based upon ancient encounters with dragons.

In any case, the early settlers heard the Thunderbird stories and helped to perpetuate them. Then, during a slack news period, the Tombstone, Arizona, Epitaph (April 26, 1890) published a marvelous Thunderbird tale which has become a classic and has delighted several generations of monster fans.

It seems that two cowhands were out on the Arizona desert one day when they came upon a weird apparition floundering about in the sand. It had a long, snake-like body mounted with unbelievably long wings. Two bony claws extended in front of the wings, and its head was like an alligator's with eyes the size of

plates. It was ill or wounded and dragged around on the ground while the cowboys' horses snorted and tried to bolt.

By the time the men got their horses under control, the thing had made a clumsy take-off, flown about half a mile, and collapsed again on the sand. The cowboys pursued it and pumped their rifles into the quivering giant, finally killing it. Then they measured it by pacing it off. It was, they reported, ninety-two feet long and fifty-two inches in diameter. The wings had a span of 160 feet (a B-52 bomber has a wingspan of 185 feet), and the head was eight feet long. Its enormous jaws were lined with razor-sharp teeth. The wings were of a thick translucent membrane and had no feathers, scales, or hair. The body itself was smooth.

After making these scientific measurements, the cowboys sliced off a tip of a wing and headed for Tombstone. The newspaper said that plans were being made to go back out and skin the thing so the hide could be shipped off to a museum.

That was the end of the story. All efforts to locate follow-ups, unearth additional information, possible surviving witnesses, and locate the ultimate fate of that wing tip have failed.

We hesitate to call the learned editor of the Epitaph a liar, but there are just a few too many microscopic details in his narrative. We can only assume that the Thunderbird wing tip is in a glass cage in the same museum which harbors the stuffed French Pterodactyl.

SEVENTEEN

The Man-Birds

ASK YOURSELF this basic question: If you saw something in the sky that looked like nothing more than an overlarge bird, would you bother to report it to anyone? Probably not. You would reason that it was an eagle, perhaps, and dismiss it from your mind. People simply do not report things that seem to have a plausible explanation. Just as nature abhors a vacuum, the average human mind abhors a "mystery." When you do have an unusual experience you usually begin to rationalize as time passes. You were overtired. You had had too much to drink. Or there had to be a sensible down-to-earth explanation for it. That is the way our minds work.

However, on September 18, 1877, one W. H. Smith saw something unusual in the skies over Brooklyn, New York. It was something so odd that he felt compelled to sit down and write a letter to the New York Sun about it. It was, he reported, "a winged human form."

Three years later a "marvelous apparition" appeared over Coney Island, right next to Brooklyn. "Many reputable persons" saw it,

according to the New York Times (September 12, 1880), "and they all agree that it was a man engaged in flying toward New Jersey."

This thing was described as "a man with bat's wings and improved frog's legs." It passed over Coney Island at an altitude of about one thousand feet, making movements which "closely resembled those of a frog in the act of swimming." A man's face was clearly seen attached to the monster and it "wore a cruel and determined expression."

Various experimenters were toying with crude gliders in those days but not over water or populated areas. They considered a flight a great success if they managed to glide downhill for a few yards.

Our next winged man was a headless "angel." Four young snepherdesses playing along a ridge near Cabeco, Portugal, in the summer of 1915 reportedly saw "a figure like a statue made of snow which the rays of the sun had turned somewhat transparent" hovering in the air. One of the girls, Lucia Ab6bora, later became a central figure in the events at Fatima, Portugal, in 1917, when a large luminous disk circled over the heads of seventy thousand people gathered in a field.

In his book on this famous "miracle," William Thomas Walsh states: "Senhora Maria de Freitas, a Portuguese writer and daughter of a famous editor of O Seculo told me in the summer of 1946 that long before she had heard anything about the apparitions at Fatima, a woman in the district repeated to her an apparently absurd tale brought home by her daughter, who said she and some others had seen a 'white man without any head floating in the air'." [1]

Mr. Gray Barker, a prominent UFO researcher, uncovered a strange story in a 1922 edition of the Lincoln, Nebraska, Daily Star. The witness, who remained anonymous in the account, claimed

that a large circular object landed near his home and an eight-foot-tall being stepped out. Gray relates the story:

> A deeply religious man, the witness was certain that this huge being must be none other than Satan himself. Remembering his Bible teachings, he mumbled, "Get thee behind me, Satan,'" and turned his back on the creature. As he turned he noticed another disk coming down from the sky, and it hovered above him as if to protect him from the landed creature.
>
> Next, the witness heard voices emanating from the airborne saucer, appropriately quoting Biblical texts.
>
> The creature on the ground, which the witness definitely felt was hostile in intent, became discouraged, as if the voices had a deterring effect upon it. It took off on foot, rapidly disappearing. The witness tracked "the devil" to where the disk had landed.
>
> Further adding fire to the diabolical theory was the fact that the thing left tracks similar to hoofmarks, and went through a barbed wire fence, which was left burning hot, and severed as if it had been burned through with a welding torch.

We have quoted this quaint account from Gray Barker's Book of Saucers because Dr. Jacques Vallee found a remarkably similar report from Nebraska in that same year, 1922, in a letter buried in the Air Force UFO files at Dayton, Ohio. The letter writer, William C. Lamb, was hunting near Hub-bell, Nebraska, when, at 5:00 A.M. on Wednesday, February 22, 1922 he heard a high-pitched sound and saw a large, dark object pass overhead, blotting out the stars. He hid behind a tree, he said, and watched as the object landed. Next he saw "a magnificent flying creature" which landed like an

airplane and left tracks in the snow. It was at least eight feet tall. It passed by the tree where Lamb was hiding, and he tried to follow its tracks but never managed to catch up with it.

This evidence is hardly very substantial—an old, undated newspaper clipping and a yellowing letter in the Air Force files. Not much proof that marvelous winged beings eight feet in height were riding around the Nebraskan skies in flying saucers in 1922.

Two or more types of winged Incomprehensibles are involved here. One is a man-like creature equipped with either real wings or mechanical wings of some sort. The other is a beast—a latter day Pterodactyl. Or maybe the two types form some kind of combination in that zone of fantasy and the fantastic.

Our records of anomalous winged creatures yield very little between the years 1922 and 1946. Then, in the summer of 1946, somebody left that door to the unknown open again, and northern Europe was engulfed in a new wave of inexplicable events and phenomena. "Ghost rockets" appeared over Scandinavia in great numbers. Over two thousand reports were collected by the Swedish General Staff alone. Finland, Norway, Denmark, and the British Isles were also affected. The phantom objects were seen as far south as Greece. Strange glowing cylindrical objects weaved through the valleys of the Swiss Alps.

Everybody blamed the Russians. The Russians denied it. The newly founded Central Intelligence Group, forerunner to the CIA, sent General Jimmy Doolittle to Stockholm to find out what in hell was going on.

All of this was a full year before any Americans had even heard of flying saucers.

The Swedes were not only seeing cylinders and saucers in their skies, they were also seeing enigmatic birds of some kind. Huge winged creatures without heads. The "ghost rockets" cornered most of the headlines in the European press, and the strange

headless "birds" were given only a passing mention.

In June 1947 the first flying saucer scare struck the United States, with the earliest publicized sightings occurring in the state of Washington, home of the Sasquatch.

On Tuesday, January 6, 1948, Mrs. Bernard Zaikowski of Chehalis, Washington, heard a "sizzing and whizzing" noise. She looked up and saw a man flying about two hundred feet above her barn. He appeared to be equipped with large silver wings held onto his body by straps, and he seemed to be manipulating some kind of controls on his chest. After hovering and maneuvering for a few seconds, he shot upwards and his wings retracted close to his body as he rose. They did not flap in flight.

"I know most people don't believe me," Mrs. Zaikowski said later, "but I have talked to some people in Chehalis who tell me they saw the man, too, and that he flew south from Chehalis and apparently came in from the north or west.

"It was about 3:00 P.M. on the Tuesday after New Year's Day, and there were a lot of small children coming home from school at the time. They saw the man, too, and asked if they could go into my back yard so they could watch him longer as he flew toward the south end of the city."

A report in Portland's Oregon Journal (January 21, 1948), added: "Police Chief Tom Murray declined to investigate. An army official at McChord Field commented that it 'sounded like one of those saucer deals—I just can't put any stock in it at all.' "

One-man helicopters and other conventional explanations were ruled out by the officials. In their account of the affair, the Portland, Oregon Oregonian noted, "Chehalis is not far from where the original flying saucers were reported about a year ago."

Four months later, on Friday, April 9, 1948, a trio of mysterious "Birdmen" put in an appearance at Longview, Washington, which lies in a straight line about forty miles due south from Chehalis.

Mrs. Viola Johnson and Mr. James Pittman were outside the laundry where they both worked when three Buck Rogers-types flew past. They were not wearing wings but seemed to be somehow flying without benefit of rotor blades, rockets, or propellers.

"They looked like three men in flying suits flying through the air," Mrs. Johnson recalled. "They wore dark, drab flying suits and as far as I can judge—I'm not very good at judging distance—they were about two hundred and fifty feet high, circling the city.

"They were going at about the same speed as a freight train, and had some kind of apparatus at their sides which looked like guns, but I know it couldn't have been guns.

"I couldn't see any propellers or any motors tied on them, but I could hear motors which sounded about like airplane motors—only not so loud.

"When they first came into sight, I thought they looked like gulls, but as they got closer I could make out that they weren't gulls and I knew they were men. I could see plainly that they were men.

"I couldn't make out their arms but I could see their legs dangling down and they kept moving their heads like they were looking around. I couldn't tell if they had goggles on but their heads looked like they had helmets on. I couldn't see their faces."

Mrs. Johnson and Mr. Pittman called for their co-workers to come out and take a look, but by the time others reached the spot the strange trio had flown off.

The next stop on the "Birdman" itinerary was Houston, Texas, in 1953. Three people were sitting on the front porch of an apartment house on East Third Street at 2:30 A.M. on Thursday, June 18, 1953. It was a hot night—too hot to sleep.

"We were just talking idly," Mrs. Hilda Walker said, "When I looked up and about twenty-five feet away I saw a huge shadow across the lawn. I thought at first it was the magnified reflection of

a big moth caught in a nearby street light. Then the shadow seemed to bounce upward into a pecan tree."

She pointed the shadow out to Howard Phillips and Judy Meyers. Later they described it as being "the figure of a man with wings like a bat. He was dressed in gray or black tight-fitting clothes. He stood there for about thirty seconds, swaying on the branch of the old pecan tree. Suddenly the light began to fade out slowly."

Judy cried out as the figure melted away.

"Immediately afterwards," Mrs. Walker continued, "we heard a loud swoosh over the housetops across the street. It was like the white flash of a torpedo-shaped object."

"He was dressed in a uniform like a paratrooper wears," Mr. Phillips added. "He was encased in a halo of light."

They all agreed that the personage was about six and a half feet tall, wearing a black cape, skin-tight pants, and quarter-length boots.

"I could see him plain and could see he had big wings folded at his shoulders," Mrs. Walker declared. "There was a dim gray light all around him."

"I saw it," Judy told reporters from the Houston Chronicle "and nobody can say I didn't."

"I may be nuts, but I saw it, whatever it was," Mr. Phillips concluded.

Ten more years slipped by before the "Birdman" chose to reappear, this time in Kent, England. Four young people were walking home from a dance along a quiet country road near Sandling Park, Hythe, Kent, on the evening of November 16, 1963. John Flaxton, seventeen, was the first to notice an unusually bright star moving directly overhead. They watched it with growing alarm as it descended and glided closer and closer to them. It seemed to hover and then dropped out of sight behind some

nearby trees.

"I felt cold all over," Flaxton recalled. He and his friends had seen enough. They started to run. The light bobbed into view again, this time much closer, floating about ten feet above the ground in a field some two hundred feet from the panic-stricken quartet.

"It was a bright gold and oval," one of them reported. "And when we moved, it moved. When we stopped, it stopped."

Once more it went out of sight behind the trees along the road. Then suddenly there was the snapping of twigs and branches and a huge black figure shuffled out of the bushes towards them.

"It was the size of a human," Mervyn Hutchinson, eighteen, told police later. "But it didn't seem to have any head. There were huge wings on its back . . . like bat wings."

They didn't wait for it to announce, "Take me to your leader." All four started to run with renewed vigor. Later, all of their descriptions were identical. Police and reporters were impressed by their genuine fright. Apparently they really had seen something tall, black, headless, with broad wings. Something that had come from the general direction of an unidentified flying object.

Charles Bowen, editor of England's esteemed Flying Saucer Review, summarized the case in FSR's casebook, THE HUMANOIDS, and mentioned three other interesting reports from the same area:

> On November 21, 1963, Keith Croucher, aged seventeen, reported seeing a solid oval light in the center of a golden mist crossing a football pitch near Sandling Estate. And on the night of November 23/24, John McGoldrick and a friend went to Sandling Woods to investigate the previously reported sightings. They found "a vast expanse of bracken that had been flattened": they

also found three giant footprints, clearly defined, an inch deep, two feet long, and nine inches across.

On December 11, McGoldrick and his friend went back to the site with two newspaper reporters, and found the woods illuminated by a pulsating light. They watched the light from a safe distance for half an hour: they were too scared to go closer.

You will note that in the Nebraskan, Texas, and Kent cases our winged entities were accompanied by UFO manifestations. None of these events were well-publicized outside of UFO research circles. The three incidents were widely seprated by time and distance. It seems reasonably safe to conclude that all of these winged entity sightings, with the possible exception of Portual's 1915 report, were directly related to the UFO phenomenon itself, just as the events we are about to recount in the next few pages definitely overlap into the UFO category.

As we have now stated repeatedly, we do not subscribe to the popular speculation that flying saucers are from outer space. Rather it seems that they, and their occupants, are inter-penetrating into our space-time continuum from some extradimensional universe beyond the range of our human perception and our instrumentation. Kent, England, is a "window" area, as is the valley of the Ohio River.

Sometime in 1960–61 (the witness no longer remembers the exact date) a lady in West Virginia (who is most prominent in civic affairs and has requested anonymity) was driving on Route 2 along the Ohio River on the West Virginia side with her elderly father. As they passed through a sector on the edge of a park known as the Chief Cornstalk Hunting Grounds, a tall man-like figure suddenly appeared on the road in front of them.

"I slowed down," she said years later, "and as we got closer we

could see that it was much larger than a man. A big gray figure. It stood in the middle of the road. Then a pair of wings unfolded from its back and they practically filled the whole road. It almost looked like a small airplane. Then it took off straight up . . . disappearing out of sight in seconds. We were both terrified. I stepped on the gas and raced out of there.

"We talked it over and decided not to tell anybody about it. Who would believe us anyway?"

The Ohio winds down to Cairo, Illinois, where it joins the Mississippi River. About 2:00 P.M. on the afternoon of Thursday, September 1, 1966, Mrs. James Ikart of Scott, Mississippi was astonished to see a man flying around above the Pine Land Plantation.

She telephoned the Delta Democrat Times, Greenville, Mississippi and a reporter armed with cameras was rushed to the scene. He found several people staring at the sky, all claiming that they had seen an object shaped like a man maneuvering overhead.

"It got down pretty low and then would go up," Mrs. Ikart told him. "I have never seen anything like this before."

It was not long before John Hursh, a meteorologist at the Stoneville weather station, offered a solution to the mystery.

"It's apparently somebody's research balloon that's gotten away," he announced.

The beloved weather balloon explanation cannot really be applied to the object seen by a California police officer on the night of Saturday, December 3, 1966. Shortly after 11:00 P.M. patrolman Vern Morse and his wife Charmion were driving along Bayshore Highway, returning to San Francisco after spending a day in Redwood City. Suddenly Mrs. Morse gasped and pointed upwards, exclaiming, "What's that?"

"At first it looked like a parachute flare," Morse said. "I thought that it would land in those buildings east of the Southern Pacific

Depot and start a fire.

"When it crossed the highway directly in front of me, it stopped descending at an altitude of about two hundred feet and began climbing. My wife said, 'Somebody's guiding it.'"

He pulled into a closed service station, turned off his engine, and stepped out of the car for a closer look. Now he could see that it wasn't a parachute but a glowing cylindrical object about three feet in diameter and eight or nine feet long, moving at an angle of about fifteen degrees below vertical.

There was a man in it.

"What had first appeared to be parachute shroud lines," he explained, "were plainly struts connecting the solid lower portion of the cylinder with the upper portion which was topped by a nose cone resembling a crash helmet.

"It looked like a flying platform with somebody standing up inside it. It passed over at about three hundred or four hundred feet and it didn't make a sound."

Morse jumped back into his car and tried to follow it. He got back onto a freeway, caught up with it, and clocked it for a mile or so. It was moving at between fifty and sixty miles an hour.

A cream-colored Mustang passed him, pulled over to the shoulder and stopped. Morse stopped behind it and ran up to the driver, a young man in a dark blue suit.

"He was as excited as I was. He said, 'Did you see that?' and we agreed that we had both seen the same thing."

They watched the flying birdcage continue northward until "it was about over Bay Meadows Race Track when the light on it went out, just as if somebody had turned a switch."

Around that same time Mr. Donald Bennett, the Federal Aviation Air Traffic controller at San Francisco Airport, was relaxing at his home in nearby San Mateo.

"My daughter and son-in-law had just returned from a movie,"

Bennett said, "and they called me outdoors. Heading west, directly overhead, were three red-orange glows in the sky. I got my binoculars and studied them. They were at an altitude of about two thousand feet, moving at a speed of about two hundred and fifty miles per hour. I could not make out any shape, but they were definitely not aircraft."

"I took a ribbing from the troops," Officer Morse admitted later. "After the story appeared in the papers, they were sailing paper airplanes around and saying, 'Hey, Vern, there goes another one.' I even had a message to call Alcoholics Anonymous. Funny part is, I don't drink at all."

Morse had been a police officer for twenty years.

Our studied conclusion from all these reports is that somebody has been flying around Brooklyn, Texas, California, and many other places since 1877, with a minimum of gear and a maximum of moxie. Who they are and why they do not share their wonderful flying apparatus with us earthbound creatures will probably never be fully known. It is easier to call them "weather balloons" and forget about them.

EIGHTEEN

West Virginia's "Mothman"

FIVE MEN were digging a grave in a cemetery near Clendenin, West Virginia, on November 12, 1966, when something that looked like "a brown human being" fluttered from some nearby trees and maneuvered low over their heads. "It was gliding through the trees," witness Kenneth Duncan of Blue Creek said, "and was in sight for about a minute."

The men were baffled. It did not look like any kind of a bird but seemed to be a man with wings. They discussed it with a few friends and would have forgotten about it if others in West Virginia had not also started seeing the enigmatic flier.

About a year earlier, a woman living on the Ohio River, some miles from Clendenin, was amused when her seven-year-old son ran into the house one day and excitedly told her that he had seen "an angel . . . a man with wings." She assumed it was just his imagination and thought no more about it.

In the summer of 1966 another woman in the Ohio valley, the wife of a doctor, was in her backyard when a six-foot-long thing soared past her very rapidly. She thought it resembled a "giant

butterfly" and she dared to mention the incident to only a few people. But all of these random, anomalous events were only the prologue to the "monster mania" which would grip the whole western edge of West Virginia in November 1966.

Earlier we discussed how Newell Partridge had seen two glowing red objects in a field near Salem, West Virginia, on the night of November 14, 1966. His dog, Bandit, a German shepherd, had run into the field and vanished. The very next night around midnight, two young couples, Mr. and Mrs. Roger Scarberry and Mr. and Mrs. Steve Mallete, were driving through an abandoned World War II ammunition dump known as the TNT Area, seven miles outside of Point Pleasant, West Virginia, when, as they passed an old deserted power plant, they saw a weird figure standing beside the road staring at them.

"It was shaped like a man, but bigger," Roger Scarberry said later. "Maybe six and a half or seven feet tall. And it had big wings folded against its back."

"But it was those eyes that got us," Linda Scarberry declared with a shudder. "It had two big red eyes, like automobile reflectors."

"For a minute we could only stare at it," Roger continued. "Then it just turned and sort of shuffled towards the open door of the old power plant. We didn't wait around."

Roger stepped on the gas pedal of his souped-up jalopy and headed out of the TNT Area for Route 62 which leads into Point Pleasant. As they shot down the highway ("We were doing better than a hundred miles per hour," Roger claimed), his wife cried out, "It's following us!"

All four swore that the "Bird" was low overhead, its wings spread out to about ten feet. It seemed to keep up with the car effortlessly even though its wings were not flapping.

"I could hear it making a sound," Mrs. Mallette, an attractive

eighteen-year-old brunette stated. "It squeaked . . . like a big mouse."

"It followed us right to the city limits," Roger went on. "Funny thing, we noticed a dead dog by the side of the road there, but when we came back a few minutes later, the dog was gone."

The panic-stricken quartet drove directly to the office of the Mason County sheriff and excitedly poured out their story to Deputy Millard Halstead.

"I've known them all their lives," Halstead told us during our first visit to Point Pleasant, "They've never been in any trouble. I took them seriously."

Deputy Halstead returned to the TNT Area with them. As he parked outside the abandoned power plant the police radio in his car suddenly emitted a strange sound like a speeded-up phonograph record. He shut the radio off. The "Bird," however, was nowhere to be found.

The next day a press conference was held in the County Courthouse and the four young people repeated their story. One of the reporters there, Mrs. Mary Hyre, Point Pleasant correspondent for the Athens, Ohio, Messenger and local stringer for the Associated Press, later told us, "I've heard them repeat their story a hundred times now to reporters from all over and none of them have ever changed it or added a word."

News of the Scarberry-Mallette sighting was flashed around the world. It even appeared in the Pacific edition of the Stars & Stripes. Television camera crews from Huntington and Charleston invaded Point Pleasant, and that night the normally deserted TNT Area resembled Times Square on New Year's Eve. But Steve Mallette announced, "I've seen it once. I hope I never see it again."

The TNT Area was to become the home grounds for the "Bird" in the months ahead, and it could not have picked a better base. The area consists of several hundred acres of woods and open

fields filled with large concrete domes called "igloos." During the Second World War these igloos were used to store high explosives manufactured in nearby plants. A network of tunnels laced throughout the area but most of these are now sealed off and are filled with water. Immediately adjoining the area is the McClintic Wildlife Station, a 2,500 acre animal preserve and bird sanctuary. Both sectors are filled with artificial ponds and dense woodlands. Steep, heavily forested, almost inaccessible hills rise in the background. The entire area is open to hunting and fishing every year and nearly every male in the county knows every inch of the place. Its winding, poorly kept dirt roads are also popular Lover's Lanes, and one stretch serves as a drag strip for local hot rodders.

Only a few homes are scattered throughout the area. One of these is the residence of the Ralph Thomas family. Their little house stands on a slight rise surrounded by woods and igloos. It was here that the next act in the "Mothman" (the name the press tagged onto the "Bird") drama took place. At 9:00 P.M. on Wednesday, November 16, 1966, Mr. and Mrs. Raymond Wamsley and Mrs. Marcella Bennett and her baby daughter, Tina, drove out to visit the Thomas'.

"On our way to the house we were watching a funny big red light in the sky," Mrs. Bennett recalled. "It seemed to be moving around over the TNT Area. It wasn't an airplane, but we couldn't figure out what it was."

Most of the crowds of would-be monster hunters had converged around the old power plant, some distance from the Thomas home. When Raymond Wamsley drove up to the house he decided he would play a prank on his friends by tapping surreptitiously on their window. He never had the chance to play the joke.

They parked in front of the Thomas home and Mrs. Bennett climbed out of the car, gathering up her sleepy two-year old in her arms. Suddenly a figure stirred behind the parked car.

"It seemed as if it had been lying down," Mrs. Bennett told us. "It rose up slowly from the ground. A big gray thing. Bigger than a man, with terrible glowing red eyes."

Mrs. Bennett was so horrified she dropped little Tina to the ground and collapsed, transfixed.

"It was as if the thing had her in some kind of trance," Mr. Wamsley said. "She couldn't move."

Panic engulfed the group. The Wamsleys ran for the house as Mrs. Bennett pulled herself together, grabbed up her bruised child, and followed. They locked themselves in. Ralph and Virginia Thomas were not home, but three of their children, Rickie, Connie, and Vickie, were. Hysteria swept over them as the strange creature shuffled onto the porch and peered into the windows. Raymond Wamsley grabbed the phone and called the police. By the time help arrived, the thing had disappeared once more.

Mrs. Bennett would not recover fully from this terrifying experience for many months. And more months passed before she was able to discuss what she had seen with anyone, even her own family. Her trauma was so real that she had to start seeing a doctor on a weekly basis. She was plagued by frightening dreams and believed that the monster repeatedly visited her home, a small house somewhat isolated on the outskirts of Point Pleasant.

"I know it has been here," she told us in the fall of 1967. "I can feel it when it's around. And I've heard it."

"What does it sound like?" we asked cautiously.

"It makes a terrible sound that goes right through your bones. It sounds like a woman screaming."

No one in Point Pleasant had ever heard the story of the 1959 monster seen in Mansfield, Ohio (Chapter Ten, Case 41). That luminous-eyed apparition also seemed to rise up off the ground.

"Mothman" cut crazy capers all over West Virginia that November. Sightings were reported in Mason, Lincoln, Logan,

Kanawha, and Nicholas Counties. Most of the population remained skeptical but the near-hysteria of the rapidly multiplying witnesses was very real. Police in the city of Charleston, West Virginia, received an excited phone call from one Richard West at 10:15 P.M., Monday, November 21. Patrolman D. L. Tucker handled the call. West insisted that a "Batman" was sitting on a roof next to his home. "It looks like a man. It's about six feet tall and has a wingspread of six or eight feet," West reported excitedly. "It has great big red eyes."

"Did it fly?" Tucker asked.

"Straight up, just like a helicopter," West answered.

In St. Albans, West Virginia, just outside of Charleston, Mrs. Ruth Foster claimed that "Mothman" appeared on her front lawn on the evening of November 26.

"It was standing on the lawn beside the porch," she told reporters. "It was tall, with big red eyes that popped out of its face. My husband is six feet one and the 'Bird' looked about the same height, or a little shorter, maybe.

"It had a funny little face. I didn't see any beak. All I saw were those big red poppy eyes. I screamed and ran back into the house. My brother-in-law went out to look, but it was gone."

The day before, on November 25, Thomas Ury was driving along Route 62 just north of the TNT Area. The time was 7:15 A.M. He noticed a tall, gray man-like figure standing in a field by the road. "Suddenly it spread a pair of wings," Ury said, "and took off straight up, like a helicopter.

"It veered over my convertible and began going in circles three telephone poles high," he continued. "It kept flying right over my car even though I was doing about seventy-five."

Mr. Ury rocketed into Point Pleasant and went straight to Sheriff George Johnson. "I never saw anything like it," he confided to Mrs. Hyre later. "I was so scared I just couldn't go to work that day.

This thing had a wingspan every bit of ten feet. It could be a bird, but I certainly never saw one like it. I was afraid it was going to come down right on top of me."

Miss Connie Carpenter, a shy, studious girl of eighteen from New Haven, West Virginia, had an identical encounter at 10:30 A.M., Sunday, November 27. She was driving home from church when she saw what she thought at first was a large man in gray standing on the deserted links of the Mason County Golf Course outside of Mason, West Virginia, on Route 62. Those ten-foot wings suddenly unfolded, the thing took off straight up and headed for her car.

"Those eyes! They were a very red and once they were fixed on me I couldn't take my own eyes off them," she declared. "It's a wonder I didn't have a wreck."

She said the creature flew directly at her windshield, then veered off and disappeared. Connie stepped on the gas and raced home in hysteria. She was so upset that she was unable to go to school for several days and required medical attention. She was the only "Mothman" witness to suffer from a common UFO ailment—klieg conjunctivitus or "eyeburn." Her eyes were red, swollen and itchy for two weeks afterwards. Many witnesses to low-flying UFOs suffer this same thing, apparently caused by actinic (ultra-violet) rays.

Miss Carpenter was also one of the few to claim a close look at the "Mothman's" face. "It was horrible . . . like something out of a science-fiction movie."

Like our Abominable Swamp Slobs, "Mothman" was fond of pursuing automobiles and people on foot. On the same night as Miss Carpenter's sighting, the creature reappeared in St. Albans. Sheila Cain, thirteen, and her sister were walking home from the store that evening when they saw an enormous something standing next to a local junk yard.

"It was gray and white with big red eyes," Sheila said, "and it

must have been seven feet tall . . . taller than a man. I screamed and we ran home."

The creature is supposed to have taken wing and flown low over the running girls.

Shortly after the first "Mothman" stories hit the local papers, a wide variety of explanations were expressed by assorted experts. Dr. Robert Smith of the West Virginia University Biology Department declared that everyone was obviously seeing a rare sandhill crane. A bird whose long neck and long legs can give it a height of six feet, and it has red patches around the eyes. Yet no hunter in the area has reported seeing such a crane, and members of the zoology department of Ohio University pointed out that the crane inhabits the plains of Canada and has never been seen in the West Virginia-Ohio region.

We carried photos of sandhill cranes and other birds (including the Pterodactyl) with us during our investigations in West Virginia. "That's not the thing we saw," Roger Scar-berry scoffed when he saw the pictures. "This thing could never chase us like it did."

"I just wish Dr. Smith could see the thing," Mary Mallette added.

All those who reported having seen "Mothman" sneered at the crane theory, but the skeptics, and they were in the majority, quickly accepted it and dismissed the mystery. Three groups of witnesses contributed to the confusion by declaring that they were convinced that the "Bird" was really some kind of giant ornithological oddity and not a "monster from outer space" as some were beginning to imply.

Captain Paul Yoder and Benjamin Enochs, both volunteer firemen from Point Pleasant, revealed that they had seen a very large bird in the TNT Area on November 18, 1966. "It was definitely a bird," they stated flatly, "with big red eyes. But it was huge. We'd never seen anything like it."

Seventy miles north of Point Pleasant as the "Bird" flies, four

people outside of Lowell, Ohio, spent a fascinating Saturday afternoon watching a group of gigantic birds flutter about the trees near Cat's Creek. They saw no glowing red eyes, witness Marvin Shock offered, but they did see four very strange winged creatures and kept them in view for two hours on November 26, 1966. Shock, who was accompanied by his two children, Marlene and Phillip, first noticed the birds in some tree branches.

"They looked about as big as a man would look moving around in the trees," Shock said later. "When we started walking toward them for a closer look—we were about one hundred yards from them—they took off and flew up the ridge."

The trio followed the birds by car and saw them settle on the edge of the woods about two hundred yards from the home of Ewing Tilton. Tilton joined them. Both men agreed that the birds stood from four to five feet tall and had a wingspread of at least ten feet.

"They had dark brown backs with some light flecks," Tilton observed. "Their breasts were gray and they had five- or six-inch bills, straight, not curved like those of hawks or vultures."

Shock thought there was a "reddish cast" to their heads. The birds kept their distance and finally flapped off into limbo. To this day we can't identify the giant species seen by these people.

At the Gallipolis, Ohio, airport, just across the river from Point Pleasant, five local pilots got an unexpected look at the "Bird" at 3:00 P.M., Sunday, December 4, 1966. When they first saw it, they mistook it for an airplane.

"Look at that crazy character coming in downwind in that plane," Eddie Adkins commented.

Everett Wedge of Point Pleasant, Henry Upton of Leon, West Virginia, and Leo Edwards, Ernie Thompson, and Adkins, all of Gallipolis, stared at the winged form gliding low over the river. It was about three hundred feet up, they all agreed, and it was

traveling about seventy miles an hour effortlessly, without flapping its wide wings.

As it sailed majestically past the airport the men noted that it seemed to have an unusually long neck and was turning its head from side to side as if it were taking in the scenery.

"It was like something prehistoric," one of them remarked later. "I don't think it was any crane."

Wedge grabbed his camera, jumped into his plane, and took off after it. But it had disappeared somewhere down river. This was the only sighting in which a neck was observed at all.

A month later another witness thought she was seeing an airplane, too, when she first noticed a large winged thing zipping along above Route 62 at 5:00 P.M. on January 11, 1967. Mrs. Mabel McDaniel, the mother of Linda Scarberry, one o the original "Mothman" witnesses, was near Tiny's drive-in restaurant on the outskirts of Point Pleasant when she first saw the "Bird."

"I thought it was an airplane, then I realized it was flying much too low," she reported. "It was brown and had a wingspread of at least ten feet." Then she added an interesting detail. "I thought I could see two legs . . . like men's legs . . . hanging down from it. It circled over Tiny's and then flew off." She did not see any head or neck. The wings were not moving and there was no sound.

The McDaniel family had been living in the twilight zone ever since their daughter and the others had first glimpsed "Mothman." Linda had repeatedly heard the sound "of a speeded-up phonograph record" around her own home after the incident, and peculiar manifestations indicating the presence of a poltergeist began. Finally she and Roger moved into the basement apartment in the McDaniel's home. The poltergeist followed them. Strange lights appeared in the house, objects moved by themselves, and the heavy odor of cigar smoke was frequently noted. No one in the family smokes. (The smell of cigar smoke is commonly reported in

many poltergeist cases throughout the world.) One morning Linda woke up and distinctly saw the shadowy form of a large man in the room. The house was searched. All the doors were still locked. There was no sign of a prowler.

Meanwhile, Connie Carpenter was having some peculiar problems. Early in February 1967 she married Mr. Keith Gordon, and they moved across the river to a two-family house in Middleport, Ohio. They did not get a telephone immediately. At 8:15 A.M., February 22, Connie left the house to go to school. As she started to walk down the street a large black car pulled up alongside her. She later identified it as a 1949 Buick. The occupant of the car opened the door and beckoned to her. Thinking that he was seeking directions, she approached him. He was a young, clean-cut man of about twenty-five, wearing a colorful Mod shirt, no jacket (it was bitter cold), had neatly combed hair and appeared to be suntanned. There was a very interesting detail: she said the car appeared to be brand new inside and out even though it was a vintage model. This detail has cropped up many times in our "Men in Black" cases. Some of these cars even smell new inside, according to various witnesses.

When she reached the automobile, the driver suddenly lunged and grabbed her arm, ordering her to get in with him. She fought back and there was a brief struggle before she finally broke away. She ran back to the house and locked herself in, completely terrified.

Connie remained indoors the following day, February 23. At 3:00 P.M. she heard someone on the porch and there was a loud knock on the door. She went to it cautiously and found a note had been slipped under it. It was written in pencil in block letters on a piece of ordinary notebook paper. "Be careful girl," it read, "I can get you yet."

That night Connie and Keith went to the local police. They

turned the note over to officer Raymond Manly. Neither the car nor the young man was seen again.

A short time later Connie and Keith moved in with her mother, Mrs. Faye Carpenter, in New Haven. Mrs. Carpenter had received no publicity of any kind, but, like nearly everyone in New Haven, she had seen unidentified flying objects. The Carpenter house was soon beset with poltergeists. On March 22, 1967, Connie was awakened in the middle of the night by a loud beeping sound which she said appeared to be coming from directly outside her window.

Back in Point Pleasant, both Mary Mallette and Linda Scarberry were visited by a mysterious couple who claimed to represent a firm which would take free annual photographs of their families, no strings attached. The man was exceptionally large and odd looking. The woman had red hair and kept in the background, hiding her face as much as possible. This couple did not visit anyone else in Point Pleasant with their unprofitable proposition.

Another mysterious note turned up in Dunbar, West Virginia, just outside of Charleston. The recipient was Mr. Tad Jones, the owner of an appliance store at Cross Lanes, West Virginia. At 9:05 A.M. on the morning of January 19, 1967, Mr. Jones was driving along Interstate Highway 64, when he came upon a large metal sphere hovering about four feet above the road. Since it was broad daylight, and since the object remained in view for about two minutes, he was able to give a very good description of it. The sphere was about twenty feet in diameter, he said, and was the color of dull aluminum. There were four legs attached to it, with caster-like wheels on the bottom of each one. He could also see a small window about nine inches in diameter and there was a "propeller" underneath the object which was idling when he came upon it. This propeller began to spin rapidly, and then the object rose and disappeared into the sky.

Mr. Jones is an impressive witness, a teetotaler with a fine reputation. He reported his sighting after thinking it over very carefully, and the local news media carried his story. The next day a note was slipped under the door of his home in Dunbar. It was written in block letters and was singed around the edges. It read, "We know what you have seen and we know that you have talked. You'd better keep your mouth shut. You want [sic] be warned again." He considered the notes a prank. Dunbar is about sixty miles southeast of Middleport, Ohio.

When we visited the exact spot of the Jones sighting we found that the object must have been hovering directly above a major gas line which passes under the road. Furthermore, we found a series of very strange footprints in the mud beside the road. We had found identical tracks behind the abandoned power plant in the TNT Area. These looked like huge dog tracks—except that they were not dog tracks and were so deep that the animal which made them must have weighed from two hundred to three hundred pounds. In addition, at the Jones site there was one single footprint of what appeared to be a naked human foot of unusually large size. The spacing of these tracks was most peculiar. They did not start anywhere, and they did not lead anywhere.

There were various rumors around Cross Lanes that "Mothman" had been seen, but we were busy with another investigation and did not have time to track them down.

When we first visited Point Pleasant in December 1966 we were nonplussed to find that the police and local newspapers had not received any flying saucer reports, but we quickly discovered that thousands of people up and down the Ohio valley had been seeing unidentified flying objects all year but were reluctant to report them. One group of witnesses, including the wife of a police officer, had seen a circular object hovering directly above Tiny's

restaurant in the summer of 1966. Another woman claimed she had seen a large metallic disk hovering over the Point Pleasant high school in March 1966. She had not told anyone because she knew no one would believe her. She not only saw the object, she said, but a door was open in it and a man was fully visible. He was wearing a tight, silvery suit and had long flowing hair.

Most people have a distorted impression of West Virginia. Point Pleasant is part of the highly industrialized Ohio Valley and is on the edge of the Bible Belt. Its six thousand inhabitants support twenty-two churches. There are no bars in the town itself. Most of the witnesses there are very devout, well educated, and own late model cars and color TV sets. Their religious convictions make them exceptionally honest witnesses.

Beginning in the fall of 1966 the TV sets and telephones in the region began to go wild, as strange blobs of crystaline white light appeared in the night skies. Many of these lights moved at tree-top level. There were also many daylight sightings of strange circular objects, particularly in the TNT Area. By the end of 1967 over one thousand UFO sightings by responsible witnesses had been recorded throughout the Valley. Cars passing along the Camp Conley Road, south of the TNT Area, stalled inexplicably. Television sets and radios, some brand new, burned out suddenly without cause. In March–April 1967 the UFO sightings hit an incredible peak with the objects appearing nightly at low level over the TNT Area as if they were following a regular flight schedule. Thousands of people invaded the section again to view this new wonder. Sheriff Johnson and most of his men were among the witnesses but soberly refused to comment on the phenomenon.

An off-duty police officer, Harold "Sonny" Harmon, was cruising around the dismal, unlit ammunition dump one night in early March 1967, when he suddenly came upon a large, dark elipitical form hovering a few feet above a small pond.

"It was definitely a solid machine of some kind," he later explained. "I could even see what appeared to be windows in it. It rocked like a boat hitting waves, and then it floated silently away over the trees."

As the UFO activity seemed to increase, the "Mothman" reports dwindled off. An Ohio man claimed that a huge winged something pursued his car up Route 33 on a rainy night in March 1967, and two women swore they saw a "Mothman" fly to meet a UFO on May 19, 1967.

"We were driving past the TNT Area on Route 62 around 10:30 P.M.," Brenda Stone said, "when we saw two bright red lights on a shadowy form high in a tree just off the road. Suddenly this big red light appeared and approached the tree, and the form rose up towards it and disappeared. Then the big light took off to the north."

That same night a group of witnesses reported seeing a brilliantly lighted object land briefly in a field next to Ohio River Junior High School in Point Pleasant.

After Mrs. Hyre began publishing some of these reports in the Athens, Ohio, Messenger, she was swamped with calls from other witnesses. She received as many as five hundred calls and reports on a single "flap" weekend. Obviously, she could only publish a very small percentage of them. By the end of 1967 she had given up trying to keep up with the reports at all and rarely published those she received. Nevertheless, the reports continued to pour in.

Shortly after noon on November 2, 1967, Mrs. Ralph Thomas heard a sound "like a squeaky fan belt" outside her home in the TNT Area. She stepped onto her porch and saw what she later described as "a tall gray figure, bigger than a man" moving swiftly among the neighboring igloos. It didn't appear to be walking, she said, rather it was sliding or gliding along the ground. She was positive it was not a man or a bear. Since it was the hunting

season, no man in his right mind would wear gray there, she noted, but would wear a red hunting jacket.

During our frequent visits to the Ohio Valley we uncovered several poltergeist cases, particularly in homes on the higher hills in the region. Locked doors would open and close by themselves. Strange thumps would be heard against the walls and roofs of isolated homes late at night. Some people heard the sound of a baby crying inside their houses and could not locate the source. The James Lilly family on Camp Conley Road, south of the TNT Area (discussed in Chapter Fourteen) experienced so much poltergeist activity throughout 1967–68 that they finally sold their home and moved to another neighborhood.

Mrs. Hyre received a long line of very strange visitors after her UFO and "Mothman" stories began to appear in the press. Early in January 1967 she was working late in her office across from the County Court House when a little man entered. He was about four feet six inches tall, she said later, and had very strange eyes covered with thick-lensed glasses. His black hair was long and cut squarely "like a bowl haircut." Although it was about 20° F outside he was wearing a short-sleeved blue shirt and blue trousers of thin material. He kept his right hand in his pocket at all times.

Speaking in a low, halting voice, he asked her for directions to Welsh, West Virginia. She thought at first that he had some kind of speech impediment, and for some reason he terrified her. "He kept getting closer and closer," she said. "His funny eyes staring at me almost hypnotically."

Alarmed, she ran into the back room where the newspaper's circulation manager was working on a telephone campaign. He joined her and they spoke together to the little man. "He seemed to know more about West Virginia than we did," she declared.

At one point the telephone rang, and while she was speaking on it the little man picked up a ball-point pen from her desk and

looked at it in amazement, "as if he had never seen a pen before." She gave him a pen and said he laughed in a loud, strange way as he took it. Then he ran out into the night and disappeared around a corner.

Being a good newspaperwoman, Mrs. Hyre later checked with the police to find out if there was any mentally deficient person on the loose who fitted the little man's description. There wasn't

Several weeks later Mrs. Hyre was crossing the street near her office when she again saw this very same man. He appeared startled when he noticed her watching him, turned abruptly, and ran for a large black car which suddenly rounded the corner. It was driven by a very large man. The little man sprang into it and it sped away.

At 5:05 P.M. on the evening of December 15, 1967, the seven-hundred-span linking Point Pleasant with Ohio suddenly collapsed laden with rush hour traffic, carrying forty-six vehicles into the dark waters of the Ohio River. That night the Lilly family on Camp Conley Road divided their attention between their TV set and the eerie lights that were racing at tree-top level over the woods behind their home. They counted twelve UFOs altogether, more than they had ever seen on a single evening before. No UFOs were reported in Point Pleasant proper on that tragic night.

The collapse of Silver Bridge made headlines everywhere, and most of the reports you read in your own newspaper had been tapped out on the teletype in the office only yards from the site of the disaster by Mrs. Mary Hyre.

Sheriff George Johnson and his tiny band of deputies acted with admirable dispatch and efficiency, sealing off the roads into the town and setting up rescue operations. Mrs. Hyre went without sleep for days as hundreds of newsmen and TV teams from all over the country descended on Point Pleasant. The local citizens

were stunned with horror and disbelief, and there were many vacant chairs around Christmas tables in Point Pleasant that year.

Christmas week, while divers were still searching for bodies in the wreckage, a white station wagon pulled into the town and a short dark-skinned man entered Mrs. Hyre's office. He was dressed in a thin black suit, with a black tie, and looked Oriental, with high cheekbones, narrow eyes, and an undefinable accent. He was not interested in the bridge disaster but professed concern about UFOs. Mrs. Hyre was too busy to spend any time with him. She handed him her file folder filled with UFO clippings, but he did not seem especially interested in them.

That night he drove to New Haven and visited Connie Carpenter at her mother's. Later, he invaded the McDaniel home. All of the people who met him felt very uneasy about him. When we interviewed the witnesses separately they all described him in exactly the same way, and all mentioned that one of his most striking features were his excessively long fingers—so long that they seemed freakish.

He identified himself as Jack Brown from Cambridge, Ohio. But when a reporter from Columbus, Ohio, stopped by the McDaniel's while he was there, it became apparent that Mr. Brown did not even know where Columbus or Cambridge was (they are only a few miles apart).

It also became quickly apparent to all the witnesses that he was not at all interested in UFOs or "Mothman" but confined most of his questioning to the activities and whereabouts of the author of this book.

Mr. Brown promised to return to Point Pleasant "in about two weeks" but he was never seen again.

Who or what was Mr. Brown? Some UFO buffs might conclude that he was really a spy from the CIA playing pointless games with honest American taxpayers. But from the general description of his

features and his erratic behavior he sounds more like one of the mischievous idiots who pop out of flying saucers.

Mr. Brown expressed some rage over various magazine articles we had written. "They [UFOs] are not hostile," he had grumbled repeatedly.

During our five lengthy visits to Point Pleasant we interviewed over one hundred monster witnesses, plus scores of UFO sighters. We began to suspect that "Mothman" was represented in only a small percentage of the incidents. It seemed that an Abominable Swamp Slob was also loose in the area. The witnesses to the real "Mothman" never saw any arms on the creature and their descriptions were impressively consistent. Others had been surprised by a giant, hair-covered, headless thing with broad shoulders.

In the majority of all the "Mothman" cases, the witnesses managed only a brief glimpse of the creature. Its most outstanding feature seemed to be its glowing red eyes. Self-luminous eyes usually suggest a paraphysical entity rather than a real animal. About half of the witnesses appeared to be people with latent or active psychic abilities, prone to having accurate premonitions, prophetic dreams, extra-sensory perception (ESP), etc. Few witnesses were able to describe the "Bird's" face, but most noted the eyes and were admittedly terrified by them. The eyes seemed to have been more terrifying than the tremendous size of the creature. While some people claimed that "Mothman" was brown, most have described it as being grayish in color. All witnesses agreed that the wings did not flap in flight, making its incredible speeds all the more unaccountable. Those who saw it walk said that it shuffled or "waddled" penguin-like. Those who claimed to have seen it take off said it rose straight up like a helicopter.

Considering its reported size, the ten-foot wingspread does not

make sense. A normal-sized man would require wings twenty to thirty feet wide in order to glide and support his weight. Most large birds must make a running start to get airborne.

Table 1 is a composite description of this Unbelievable.

The following composite description of West Virginia's "Mothman" has been compiled from more than one hundred eye-witness accounts:

1. HEIGHT: Between five and seven feet tall. Usually described as "taller than a goodsized man."
2. BREADTH: Broad at the top with slight taper downwards. Always described as "very broad, much broader than a man."
3. COVERING: Witnesses have been unable to determine if it is clothed or covered with skin. Generally described as being gray, though some thought it was brown. One witness thought it was covered with gray fur. Daylight sightings of others do not substantiate this.
4. HEAD: Seen from the back it appears to have no head. Few witnesses reported seeing any face at all.
5. EYES: Self-luminous, bright red, approximately two to three inches in diameter, set wide apart. Witnesses say the eyes are set in near the top of shoulders.
6. LEGS: Man-like. No witness has ever been able to describe the feet.
7. ARMS: None. No witness has ever reported seeing arms.
8. WINGS: Fold against the back when not in use. Wingspread, everyone agrees, is about ten feet Bat-like. Do not flap in flight.
9. CARRIAGE: Animal walks erect like a man. Does not stoop like a bear or ape. Moves its legs in a shuffling manner. Some said it "waddled."

10. SOUND: Loud squeaks, like a mouse. One witness said it sounded "like a squeaky fan belt." Two witnesses testified they heard a mechanical humming sound as the creature flew overhead.
11. SPEED: It is said to have kept pace with automobiles moving seventy to one hundred mph. Few birds can achieve this in level flight. Pilot witnesses estimated it was traveling at least seventy mph in level flight without flapping its wings.

The anomalous bird hypothesis is strongly supported by the Lowell, Ohio, sighting and by the report of the five pilots in Gallipolis. However, if the "Mothman" was the Ohio bird, then its behavior would have been different. It would not have been so illusive, since the Ohio creatures did not seem to be particularly disturbed by the presence of the witnesses. Moreover, something that looked like nothing more than a giant bird would be more apt to evoke curiosity instead of terror. It is also puzzling that no one else in Ohio or West Virginia even glimpsed such a bird. But it is possible that the gravediggers in Clendenin may have done so.

Two unusual birds were caught in the area, however. In late December 1966 a rare Arctic snow owl was shot by a farmer in Gallipolis Ferry, West Virginia. This was two feet tall and had a five foot wingspan. "Mothman" witnesses converged on the farmer for a look at the owl and all of them declared that it in no way resembled what they had seen.

In July 1967 another rare bird turned up. This one was a turkey vulture and stood a foot tall. It was found by a group of boys near New Haven, West Virginia. Again, the "Mothman" witnesses looked and shook their heads.

We do suspect that a few alleged "Mothman" witnesses did mistake owls for "Mothman." While driving through the TNT Area late one night in November 1967, we were startled ourselves when

a huge owl suddenly flapped into the air next to the road. It was so big that it was carrying a full-grown rabbit in its talons. Perhaps if a similar owl suddenly fluttered in front of a car filled with teenagers they might mistake it for something larger and more dramatic.

In Table 18.1 we have outlined twenty-six of the more responsible "Mothman" sightings. Full details of several of these cases appear in the main text. Like our A.S.S. and UFOs, "Mothman" displayed special delight in pursuing automobiles, a habit that is definitely not birdlike.

We also carefully explored one other possibility—bears. We learned that bears are rarely seen in Mason County, but in November 1966 Mr. Cecil Lucas saw three bear-like creatures sniffing around an oil pump in his field. His farm is located on the banks of the Ohio, just off Route 62. When he came out of his house to investigate, the dark, hairy forms ran off erect towards the river, disappearing into a thicket. No bears had been seen before or since by anyone else in the region.

We carefully avoided mentioning any theories or speculations, assuming that if there were Abominable Swamp Slobs in the neighborhood we would eventually receive better descriptions of them. Our hunch was right. Throughout 1968 Mrs. Hyre received a series of reports of tall hairy creatures with luminous eyes. In incident after incident these creatures approached parked cars in Lovers' Lanes, or stepped in front of vehicles on back roads. They stood erect, six to seven feet tall, and were usually reported as holding out their arms, or pointing their arms upwards. A place called Jerrico Road seemed to produce most of these reports. Mrs. Hyre published very few of them.

A winged giant was also seen on a few rare occasions in 1968-69. In September 1968 there was a massive but little-publicized

UFO "flap" throughout northeastern United States. Across the border in Canada there were several UFO landings and "little men" reports beginning on September 15. All hell broke loose in Point Pleasant that night. The sheriff's office was inundated with phone calls, and Mrs. Hyre estimated that five hundred people had seen something unusual that weekend. Here is part of the story she published in the Messenger on September 18,1968:

> Three teen-age boys saw an object in the TNT Area and said that the object's white light focussed on them was so bright they could not look at it. The 'round object' was about three hundred feet long.
> One time it appeared over the hilltop on Jerrico Road. Witnesses reported it had long and short prongs.
> In the same area there was an object flying first fast, then slow. It would hover, displaying green, red, and white lights.
> Timmie Clendenin and Johnny Love said they saw a bright light at Ordnance School. When they went to investigate, it "took off." They chased it to Route 2.
> No one who saw the object detected any wings. Some persons heard a humming sound, similar to that of a plane or helicopter.
> One person said the object stayed above his car while he was traveling home from his job.
> A Letart man reported that the object circled the area there for thirty-five minutes.
> People on Thomas Ridge said it stayed for thirty minutes or more in that area and was circling the area using an extremely bright searchlight on the ground.
> Many first thought it was a pilot in trouble, trying to find a place to land, but the Mason County airport was

lighted. The object went over it several times.

TABLE 18.1
26 "Mothman" Sightings
West Virginia 1966–1967

Date	*Witnesses*	*Locale*	*Description*
Sept. 1, 1966	Several adults	Scott, Miss.	Man-shaped object maneuvering at low altitude.
Nov. 1, 1966	National Guardsman	Armory, near Camp Conley Rd., Point Pleasant	A large, brown man-shaped figure on limb of tree.
Nov. 12, 1966	5 male adults	Cemetery near Clendenin, W. Va.	A flying, brown human-shaped object.
Nov. 15, 1966	2 married couples	TNT Area, near old power plant, Point Pleasant, W. Va.	Large gray man-shaped creature with blazing red eyes, 10′ wing span. Pursued witnesses' auto.
Nov. 16, 1966	3 adults, 3 children	TNT Area, near "igloos"	Tall, grayish creature with glowing red eyes.
Nov. 17, 1966	Teenaged boy	Route 7, near Cheshire, Ohio	Gray man-shaped creature with red eyes and 10′ wing spread pursued witness' auto.
Nov. 18, 1966	2 firemen	TNT Area	Giant winged creature with red eyes.
Nov. 20, 1966	6 teenagers	Campbells Creek, W.Va.	Gray man-sized creature with red eyes.
Nov. 24, 1966	2 adults, 2 children	Point Pleasant	Giant flying creature with red eyes.
Nov. 25, 1966	Male adult	Highway passing TNT Area	Gray man-like being with red eyes and 10′ wingspread. Pursued auto.
Nov. 26, 1966	2 male adults, 2 children	Lowell, Ohio	Four giant brown and gray birds, with reddish heads. 5′ tall, 10′ wing spans.
Nov. 26, 1966	Housewife	St. Albans, W. Va.	Gray creature with red eyes, taller than a man, standing on lawn.
Nov. 27, 1966	Teenaged girl	Mason, W. Va.	Tall, gray man-shaped being with 10′ wingspan and red eyes. Pursued auto.
Nov. 27, 1966	2 teenaged girls	St. Albans, W. Va.	Gray seven-foot tall creatures pursued witnesses (who were on foot).
Dec. 4, 1966	5 pilots	Gallipolis, Ohio, airport	Giant "bird," appeared to be plane at first. Long neck reported. Estimated speed: 70 mph.

Dec. 6, 1966	Mailman	Maysville, Ky.	Giant birdlike creature in flight.
Dec. 6, 1966	2 adults	TNT Area	Giant gray man-like figure with glowing red eyes.
Dec. 7, 1966	4 adult women	Route 33, Ohio	Brownish-silver man-shaped flying creature with glowing red eyes.
Dec. 8, 1966	2 adult women	Route 35, W.Va.	Shadowy figure on hilltop, two glowing red eyes.
Dec. 11, 1966	1 adult male, 1 boy	TNT Area	Man-shaped figure, gray, flying overhead at great speed.
Dec. 11, 1966	Adult woman	Route 35, W.Va.	Huge gray creature with glowing red eyes, flew past car.
Jan. 11, 1967	Housewife	Point Pleasant	Winged being as big as a small plane flew low over Route 62.
Mar. 12, 1967	1 adult woman	Letart Falls, Ohio	Large white flying being with long hair, 10′ wingspread, passed directly in front of car.
May 19, 1967	1 adult woman	TNT Area	Flying creature with growing red eyes approached hovering luminous object and disappeared.
Nov. 2, 1967	Adult woman	TNT Area	Giant gray man-like figure gliding swiftly at ground level across field.
Nov. ?, 1967	4 adult males	Chief Cornstalk Park, W.Va.	Witnesses claim to have encountered a giant gray figure with red eyes while hunting. They were so frightened they never thought to raise their rifles.

One teen-ager said that he saw a "big thing" recently that he could not identify. He said he was in the TNT Area. He turned a curve and on the bank was a creature about six feet tall. It was white and had red eyes. He said he stopped his car but the creature ran. Others have reported seeing similar creatures in the area.

Point Pleasant, West Virginia, is a typical "window" area. There are hundreds of others throughout the United States, each marked by continuous UFO activity over long periods of time, bizarre monster sightings, and the mysterious comings and goings of unusual persons. It is completely erroneous to blame the collapse of the rickety old Silver Bridge on flying saucers or "Men in Black." But the intense UFO activity in the TNT Area on the night of the disaster does suggest some intangible relationship.

Our in-depth investigations in several other "windows" in the

United States have uncovered manifestations and phenomena identical to the things we found in Point Pleasant. When the flying saucers arrive they bring with them strange invisible forces, frightening screams in the night, and luminous phantoms.

The winged "Mothman" never left behind any footprints, droppings or other physical evidence. The only traces of any kind that were found were those giant dog tracks. Similar tracks have been found at other monster sites around the world.[1]

People in Point Pleasant continued to see monsters and UFOs throughout 1969, but Mrs. Hyre published very few of their reports. One morning in April 1969 Mr. Ernest Adkins stepped from his home on a farm near New Haven, West Virginia, and found his eleven-week-old beagle pup dead in his yard. "There was no evidence that the dog died in a fight," Adkins said. "But there was a large, very neat hole in its side, and the animal's heart was lying outside the body. It looked as if something chewed it out. There were no other marks on the body."

No known animal would, or could, tear the heart out of a dog without leaving other marks on the carcass. And any animal that might attempt such a thing would certainly have eaten the heart or some part of the dog.

We investigated the situation in Point Pleasant as thoroughly and as carefully as was humanly possible. But after all of our interviews and all of our experiences we were still left with the basic, disturbing question: What is really on the loose in West Virginia?

NINETEEN

Unidentified Swimming Objects

SOMETHING IS going on at the bottom of the oceans, and even in placid lakes and streams all over the world. Strange objects and creatures frequently have been observed on top of the water and deep within it. The United States government has been taking these sightings far more seriously than the now-routine flying saucer appearances in our skies. In January 1969 the Navy revealed the existence of a top secret nuclear submarine called the NR-1. It cost nearly 100 million dollars and carries a crew of seven. A conventional nuclear sub carries a crew of over one hundred. Why do we need a seven-man submarine worth 100 million dollars? The Navy says "to explore commercial and military possibilities of the ocean floor."

The NR-1 is equipped with a vast array of underwater lights, television and motion picture cameras, and numerous other space-age gadgets including mechanical arms. The sub can operate at depths down to two thousand feet. Originally it was supposed to cost a mere 30 million dollars but it turned out that the sub itself finally cost 67.5 million dollars to build. Another 11.8 million

dollars went to "research and development." And those TV cameras and mechanical arms ran to 19.9 million dollars. Then the whole project was classified "Top Secret" and we can only assume that seven men are riding around in it somewhere out there, probing the ocean's bottom and photographing the strange creatures which live there. It is even possible that they are looking for other super-submarines of unknown origin. There is plenty of evidence that such super-subs do exist.

Numerous oceanographic expeditions have picked up perplexing underwater anomalies on their instruments throughout the 1960s. Glistening metallic objects larger than any known submarines have surfaced off the coasts of Australia and South America, inspiring extensive, fruitless military searches by sea and air. Some of the underwater objects intercepted by sonar were traveling at impossible speeds, too fast for any known fish or man-made submarine.

We now know more about the moon than we do about the Atlantic Ocean. Four-fifths of this planet is water, and we have only explored and mapped a minute section of it. For all we know, the ocean could be filled with enormously complex living organisms of a size and nature which would dwarf the imagination of our science fiction writers. There is even one small UFO cult who actually believe that survivors of "Lost Atlantis" are living in splendid cities on the ocean's bottom.

The existence of Atlantis will remain debatable, but we do know that there are strange mechanical objects and animal forms in the ocean depths. Scientists about the oceanographic ship Eltanin sent a special camera to the bottom in a series of expeditions in 1964, west of Cape Horn, and at a depth of 13,500 feet, they photographed a bizarre piece of technology which remains unexplained to this day. It was a complicated-looking machine with rods or antennae jutting out from it. "I wouldn't like to say

that the thing is man-made," Dr. Thomas Hopkins, one of the discoverers, said, "because this brings up the problem of how it would get there!"

Other expeditions equipped with similar cameras have photographed giant three-toed footprints in the slime of the ocean floor. Something huge and unknown seems to be strolling about there almost completely unnoticed.

We have developed a supposedly foolproof gadget known as a Simrad which is a sophisticated form of sonar and is used to map the ocean bed. Early in 1969 the M/V Mylark was cruising Raspberry Strait off Alaska when the screen of the Simrad device formed a startling image. Somewhere fifty-five fathoms (around three hundred feet) below the boat a creature two-hundred feet long roughly in the shape of an extinct dinosaur was moving about. Electronic specialists checked out the equipment and could find nothing wrong with it. The scientists were forced to shrug in dismay; the object or animal must have been real. But what was it? It may be a long time before we have an answer to that one.

The navies of Argentina, Brazil, and Venezuela have frequently been called out on frustrating searches for mystery submarines.[1] The same sort of unidentified craft have appeared near Australia and New Zealand, baffling expert witnesses who could not identify them as being any known American or Soviet submarines. On January 12, 1965, the pilot of a DC3 saw a strange, elongated object in a shallow harbor near Helensville, New Zealand. He swooped down for a closer look, thinking at first that it was a gray-white whale that had been washed ashore. But when he got closer to it he realized it was some sort of metallic structure. Here is his description:

1. It was perfectly streamlined and symmetrical in shape.
2. It had no external control surfaces or protrusions.

3. It appeared metallic and there was a suggestion of a hatch on top, streamlined in shape, not quite halfway along the body as measured from the nose.
4. It was resting on the bottom of the estuary and headed towards the south as suggested by the streamlined shape.
5. The shape was not that of a normal submarine.
6. Its length was an estimated one hundred feet, with a diameter of fifteen feet at the widest part.
7. The object rested in no more than thirty feet of water and the craft was very clearly defined.

Naval authorities said the object could not have been a conventional submarine because the estuary was inaccessible.

Writing in Spaceview magazine (February/March 1966), Mr. H. J. Hinfelaar outlined several other sightings of these enigmatic non-submarines in New Zealand waters. Two fishermen, R. D. Hanning and W. J. Johnson, said they had seen one of these things a few hundred yards off Bugged Islands in the southern part of New Zealand at 11:30 A.M. on November 13, 1965. It rose up out of the water about three hundred yards away from their boat Eleoneai, and "its tapered structure" lifted about fifteen feet above the water. No periscope, railing, or other conventional configuration was visible. After a few seconds the water started to churn and the thing disappeared. The witnesses dutifully reported this event to the naval authorities. The Deputy Chief of Naval Staff later said that "it was most unlikely that the object—whatever it might have been—was a submarine, because it would have been operating in an area where there are rocks, a definite submarine hazard. Besides, there was no logical reason for any submarine to be in that area."

Soviet and United States submarines carefully obey international law. They are not likely to invade the sovereign waters of neutral

countries, and they certainly would not sneak into busy harbors, attract attention, and become the subjects of massive submarine hunts. Yet, over the past few years, there have been several episodes in which mystery submarines have indulged in such daring manuevers and have been hunted by the whole navies of South American countries. In several of these cases, those navies were convinced that they had trapped the sub in some cove or harbor, only to have it melt away as mysteriously as it had appeared.

Early in September 1969, according to Reuters, the Swedish navy was called out to hunt "a mystery submarine sighted in a prohibited area of Stockholm's archipelago." Destroyers and coast guard vessels sealed off the area, convinced they had something completely trapped. Whatever it was, it got away.

There are now thousands of reports of unidentified flying objects plunging out of the sky to dive into lakes, rivers, and oceans. Many of these incidents set off massive searches for crashed airplanes but, without exception, no trace of the submerged object was ever found. In a typical case, the witnesses would see a large, brilliantly illuminated object suddenly hurtle into the water—often without even a splash. In innumerable instances large crowds of people have observed this phenomenon. Even stranger, the phenomenon has a habit of repeating itself at the very same spot. Meteors and other natural objects would not and could not be so selective.

Monster-plagued Nova Scotia has produced a long line of these sightings over the years. The numerous sightings of peculiar aerial lights around Nova Scotia in September 1967, seemed to reach a climax on Wednesday, October 4, when witnesses around Shag Harbor saw a group of flashing lights descend and hit the water. A crowd gathered along the beach to watch one of the lights bob in

the black waters. Members of the Royal Canadian Mounted Police arrived on the scene and saw the light themselves.

"After it hit the water we were called to the scene," Constable Ron O'Brien told a reporter from the Halifax Mail-Star. "I saw a light floating on the water about half a mile offshore."

Boats were sent out, supposedly to do some rescuing, but all they found was a patch of bubbling water and foam about eighty feet wide. Captain Bradford Shand said it was yellowish in color and he had never before seen anything like it Other witnesses came forth, telling corroborating stories of seeing a dark sixty-foot-long object bearing a series of lights strike the surface of the water, float for a few minutes, and then sink out of sight.

Divers were brought into the area and a thorough search was held. Nothing was found.

Fort, Farish, and many other researchers have uncovered reports of water-entering UFOs going back to the nineteenth century and even earlier. But, like most of the other aspects of the UFO phenomenon, this data has never been properly collected, catalogued, indexed, and placed in proper perspective. Cultists of religious orientation use the Bible and turn to Revelation (8:10-11) for their explanation:

> . . . and there fell a great star from heaven, burning as it were a lamp, and it fell upon the third part of the rivers, and upon the fountains of waters;
> And the name of the star is called Wormwood: and the third part of the waters became wormwood; and many men died of the waters, because they were made bitter.

On May 23, 1969, according to police on Nun's Island three eyewitnesses saw "a round shining object with flashing red lights" plunge from the sky and disappear into the waters of the St.

Lawrence River. A superficial search was held and, as usual, nothing was found at the site.

Down in South America, many rumors were flying around Cusco, Peru, always a busy UFO "window." Vague reports stated that over thirty UFOs had been seen plunging into a lake near Cusco. It may be coincidental that famed oceanographer Jacques Cousteau arrived in the area in 1969, complete with his tiny submarine. He spent several weeks diving in the mountain lake to take a look at the local fish, but his presence excited a new wave of UFO rumors. Some enthusiasts claimed that the government had hired Cousteau to look for sunken saucers. Apparently he did not find any.

This book is necessarily more concerned with unusual creatures than with unusual objects. You will find many other references to interesting water cases in the vast mass of UFO literature now available. There are many solid reports describing how huge objects, particularly cigar-shaped objects, were seen to rise up out of the water where they had been apparently submerged, circle a ship filled with amazed witnesses, and then fly off into the stars. There was an interesting wave of such events in the 1930s, seemingly concentrated in the northern latitudes.

All of this indicates that solid metallic objects of unknown origin and purpose are openly operating in all of our oceans, perhaps even hiding out there. In recent years the United States has instrumented several elaborate and expensive oceanographic expeditions, some of them sending astronauts off on missions to the bottom of the oceans! These projects will certainly expand our knowledge of the earth's bodies of water and might even eventually provide us with some unexpected answers to these other myteries.

TWENTY

Scoliophis Atlanticus

A LARGE GROUP of students from Hong Kong University were on a beach late one night in March 1969, when they heard a "crying noise." Benjamin Chae said, "I looked out to the sea and about twenty yards from us, a big black creature was rising from the water. I yelled out Kai Kwai [sea devil] and all the others saw it too."

Whatever it was, it was black, twenty to thirty feet long, and had big green eyes. It wailed something like a baby crying and sank again into the water after about thirty seconds. "It was fantastic," Lulu Chow said. "It had a big head. It wasn't a fish, that's all I can say . . ."

That same month fishermen on City Island Bridge in the Bronx, New York, many thousands of miles from Hong Kong, were gaping in disbelief at a huge, slimy, black-and-grey creature swimming unconcernedly upriver, past one of the largest cities in the world. The witnesses said that it was much bigger than a whale. Soon afterwards, people from Little Neck Bay, Queens, reported seeing the thing. Harbor Police dashed off on a futile sea

serpent chase, according to the Bronx Journal News.

Ever since man learned to sail he has been seeing sea monsters and ocean-going Unbelievables. The earliest maps were covered with drawings of grotesque reptiles and notations asserting, "Here there be monsters." Whole crews of ships have seen the creatures, and marine journals going back two hundred years are filled with carefully recorded reports giving full descriptions of the beasts, the exact latitudes and longitudes they were sighted, and other pertinent details. Five or ten new sea serpent sightings turn up in the daily press every year.

Still, science treats sea serpents as humorous myths. And when the carcass of one washes up on a beach, and many have, the Type B scientists soberly offer explanations that border on insanity. UFOs are "meteors," Abominable Snowmen are fugitives from a zoo, and sea serpents are elephants according to our learned men of science.

Dr. Bernard Heuvelmans, one of the few scientists to make a serious study of sea serpents, has speculated that there may actually exist at least seven different types of unclassified sea monsters. With his usual wry British style, Ivan T. Sanderson has labeled one group of beached behemoths Globsters. They are, indeed, grotesque globs of something.

Some of the earlier sea serpent sightings could very well have disappointing explanations. Giant squid could supply the answer to a few cases. These enormous, multitentacled creatures have been known to attack small boats from time to time. In the 1920s some film makers operating in a diving bell off the coast of Bermuda were attacked by one of these things. It was so big that it actually picked up the heavy diving bell and shook it until the cameramen inside were knocked unconscious.

Science regarded the giant squid as a legend of the sea until around 1880. But drawings of the creature can be found on ancient

Greek urns and in old Japanese woodcuts. The squid has a huge, cigar-shaped body with eyes as big as saucers, a beak like a parrot, and ten tentacles lined with suction cups, two of the arms being somewhat longer than the others. It would be very unpleasant to meet one while taking a moonlight dip. Those tentacles can grow as long as fifty feet, and if a submerged squid chose to flutter one or two above the surface you might think you were seeing a serpent of some kind.

One of these squid apparently attacked a ship captained by Jean Mangus Dens back in the 1730s. In his report Captain Dens said that a "monster so horrible as to defy description" grabbed three of his men in its frightening tentacles. The crew fought it off with harpoons, and it finally released its victims and dropped back into the sea.

Sea serpents became a vogue in the nineteenth century, and many spurious reports are widely published. Others were seemingly very legitimate. One of the classics is the sighting made by the crew of the H.M.S. Daedalus, a nineteen-gun corvette commanded by Captain Peter M'Quhae. While in the South Atlantic something sixty feet or longer appeared three hundred feet from the ship, rapidly swimming in the other direction. Its head, which resembled that of a snake, jutted about four feet out of the water.

On December 4, 1893, the steamer Umfuli encountered and chased a sea serpent. It was a calm, sunny day and the Umfuli was sailing about thirty miles off the coast of West Africa when the thing surfaced suddenly four hundred yards to the starboard. Three massive humps were visible in the water and the creature's head and neck were about fifteen feet above the surface. Captain Cringle ordered his helmsman to turn and try to follow the creature. He chased it for twenty minutes at a speed of fourteen knots and the thing outran him! Cringle filed a detailed report and

the press had a field day with it. Years later, in 1929, Captain Cringle told Captain Ruppert Gould, a pioneer monster hunter, "I've been so ridiculed about the thing that I've many times wished that someone else had seen that sea monster rather than me. I've been told that it was a string of porpoises, that it was an island of seaweed, and I don't know what else besides. But if an island can travel at the rate of fourteen knots, or if a string of porpoises can stand fifteen feet out of the water, then . . . I give in."

The squid can travel very fast underwater, using a kind of jet propulsion, spewing out streams of water. But when it is moving, its body goes first and its long tentacles follow. They would not stick out of the water and resemble a serpent's head.

It is also believed that the serpents sighted are really the oarfish or eels. The oarfish is a long, serpentine thing and is rarely caught. It swims like a fish, however, and in no way duplicates the often observed undulating motions of sea serpents. Eels, on the other hand, come in a wide variety of sizes and some of them are minor Incomprehensibles. At least one type could be the source of a few sea serpent stories.

Something estimated to measure between 60 and 140 feet long put in an appearance off the coast of Gloucester, Massachusetts, in the summer of 1817. Mr. Amos Story said he saw it at noon on Sunday, August 10, 1817, and watched it swim about for an hour. It had a "turtle-like head" and was as big around as a man. He estimated that it sometimes moved as fast as thirty miles an hour. Other people around Gloucester allegedly saw the thing during the next two weeks. Finally, according to Bert Groth's account in Fate, (May 1969), a baby sea serpent was found, killed, and exhibited in the Essex Coffee House in Gloucester. It was three feet long, brown, and had thirty-two humps on its back. It was named scoliophis atlanticus, "the flexible snake of the Atlantic."

If the scoliophis atlanticus had been discovered in a later, more

sophisticated period the whole sea serpent controversy might have been resolved once and for all. But in 1817, science was not even ready to accept the existence of the giant squid, and there were no scientists to scurry to Gloucester and examine the three-foot, multi-humped baby sea serpent.

In 1930 the nets about the research ship Dana reeled in another Incomprehensible. The Dana was only a few miles from the spot in the South Atlantic where the Daedalus had sighted a sea monster nearly a century before. Dr. Anton Bruun was somewhat amazed by the six-foot-long thing in his net. He dissected and studied it carefully and his amazement grew. The thing was a larva! If it was six feet long in the larva stage, then it was capable of growing up to 100 or even 180 feet long! From his study of the creature's structure, Bruun concluded that it was some kind of giant eel.

The conger eel can grow up to ten feet long, and the record moray eel was sixteen feet long. But their larva are only three or four inches in length. A larva six feet long could grow to thirty times that length. Dr. Bruun was convinced that he had solved the sea serpent mystery, but his larva was anomalous. Later expeditions to the same spot failed to find duplicates. In his book The Mystery Monsters Gardner Soule quotes Bruun as saying: "If the monstrous larva exist, the monstrous adults must exist, too—as terrifying as any sea serpent ever painted. I shall search for them again, and some day they will be found . . ." I am a man who rather believes in sea serpents."

On June 11, 1930, Dr. William Beebe was 550 feet down in the Atlantic in his famous bathysphere when he also saw some kind of giant larva. "A big leptocephalus undulated past," he wrote later. "A pale ribbon of transparent gelatin with only the two iridescent eyes to indicate its arrival. As it moved, I could see the outline faintly—ten inches long at least—and as it passed close, even the parted jaws were visible. This was the larva of some great sea eel."

In July 1963 a transparent submersible had the gall to appear directly off the East Coast of the United States, just south of New York City. It had the further affrontery, to swim past the research ship Challenger loaded down with scientists. One of them, Dr. Lionel A. Walford of the Sandy Hook Marine Laboratories, described it this way: "It resembled a transparent sea monster. It looked like so much jelly. I could see no bones and no eyes, nose, or mouth. But there it was, undulating along, looking as if it were almost made of fluid glass. It was from forty to fifty feet long and five to seven inches in diameter."

This same thing was seen a short time later off the coast of Asbury Park, New Jersey. If it was a larva, we had rather not meet it after it grows up.

Hairy things with unbelievably tough hides, several times larger than the largest known whale, with tusks sometimes as long as twenty feet, wash up on beaches. Crowds gather to mutter in confusion. And then Type B scientists resolve the mystery by calling them whales anyway. Another explanation in vogue is to say that they are the remains of elephants or even ancient mammoths which have recently been freed from floating icebergs.

The "iceberg" hypothesis is not merely unscientific, it is moronic. So far as is known, no animal—modern or prehistoric—has ever been found encased in a floating iceberg. If it were even remotely possible for an ancient beast to emerge from a melting iceberg, it would certainly drift ashore in the northern climes. But our hairy beasts have a habit of turning up on beaches in Florida and Mexico many thousands of miles south of the icerberg belt.

Perhaps this pseudoscientific myth springs from the fact that some prehistoric saber-toothed tigers and mammoths were found frozen in muck in northern Siberia around the turn of the century. Muck is frozen soil completely unrelated to icebergs. Apparently

those animals were caught in landslides or some other catastrophe and their bodies were quick-frozen. One theory is that the earth shifted suddenly on its axis long ago, with tropical areas suddenly ending up in the northern latitudes.

We have located only one story about a frozen monster in more recent times. In 1930 when a skeleton and a pile of flesh were allegedly discovered on Glacier Island, Alaska. The creature was twenty-four feet long and covered with hair or fur. Its head was fifty-nine inches long, and it had a thirty-nine-inch snout. No long-snouted, twenty-four-foot furry Incomprehensible is known to paleontology, not that this means very much. There are several types of bedbugs that have never been classified and catalogued either.

In September 1808, something with six arms, and paws or wings washed up on a beach in the Orkney Islands. One Dr. Barclay observed it and announced that it was "without the least resemblance or affinity to fish." When it turned rancid it was hauled out to sea again.

Twelve miles south of St. Augustine, Florida, a massive pink thing floated ashore on December 1, 1896. Professor A. E. Verrill looked it over. It was twenty-one feet long, seven feet wide and four and a half feet high, he reported, and weighed an estimated seven tons. It did not appear to be the remains of an octopus or a whale. "The hide is of a light pink color, nearly white," said the New York Herald (December 2, 1896), "and in the sunshine has a distinct silvery appearance. It is very tough and cannot be penetrated with a sharp knife."

In a book called Battles with Giant Fish F. A. Mitchell-Hedges described a huge something that washed up on a beach on Cape May, New Jersey, in November 1921. It was supposed to have weighed an estimated fifteen tons and was as large as five fully grown elephants. The late Charles Fort took an interest in this one

and tried to collect more information. He did manage to locate some photographs of the thing. It had two six-foot-long tusks.

On October 24, 1924, another Incomprehensible floated onto a beach in Natal, Africa. It was forty-seven feet long and was covered with white hair, like a polar bear's.

Tasmania has given us a number of interesting animal oddities, as we have already noted. On April 20, 1913, two miners named Davis and Harris reported seeing a very strange creature near Macquarie Harbor. It may have been some kind of sea-going amphibian.

"The animal was about fifteen feet long," they said. "It had a very small head, only the size of the head of a kangaroo dog. It had a thick, arched neck, passing gradually into the barrel of the body. It had no definite tail and no fins. It was furred, the coat in appearance resembling that of a horse of chestnut color, well-groomed and shining. It had four distinct legs. It traveled by bounding—i.e., by arching its back and gathering up its body, so that the footprints of the forefeet were level with those of the hind feet. These showed circular impressions with a diameter of nine inches, and the marks of claws about seven inches long, extending outward from the body. There was no evidence for or against webbing."

Perhaps if this same animal were swimming and using the same "bounding" movements it would resemble the classic sea serpent. Maybe Davies and Harris saw a sea serpent on shore leave.

Anomalous sea creatures are constantly being caught, reported upon briefly, and then completely forgotten. A Mexican shrimp boat Xochitl Elena came upon a floundering thing in the Gulf of Mexico in May 1954. Long heavy harpoons bounded off of its tough hide, but finally the crew managed to spear it and haul it aboard. It was four feet long, six feet wide, had long sharp teeth and stubby fins, tipping the scales at 550 pounds. It remains

unidentified.

One Joseph Korhummel was walking along the shore near Redwood, California, in July 1955, when he saw something splashing about just offshore. He climbed onto some rocks for a better look and saw what he described as a snakelike creature sixteen to eighteen feet long. It was brownish-green, had a fin just behind its head, and was at least a foot in diameter.

A few months later, in December 1955, an eight-hundred-pound, snake-like thing washed ashore at Venice, California. It was sixteen feet long and fourteen inches in diameter, and came complete with fins and a snakish head.

Over in Girvan, Scotland, a hairy, thirty-foot long Incomprehensible washed up in September 1953. This one had a ten-foot giraffe-like neck, four short legs, a pointed tail twelve feet long, and a coat of heavy dark brown hair. The official scientific opinion, sight unseen, was that it was a shark! When it started to pollute the good Scottish air the local citizens poured oil on it and cremated it.

Bordeaux, France, became the unwilling host to another smelly carcass in January of 1960: It was thirteen feet long, ten feet wide, with a flat head about three feet in diameter. It had huge six-foot flippers and was covered with thick black hair about four inches long. No one ever found out what it was. It was stinking up Cape Ferrat Beach so it was hauled out to sea unceremoniously and dumped.

In the summer of 1960 a storm regurgitated an immense hair-covered Globster onto an obscure beach in Tasmania. Three men, Ben Fenton, Jack Boote, and Ray Anthony, were rounding up cattle in the area that August when they stumbled across it. They said it was circular and was covered with short, soft fur. They left it there.

Nearly two years passed before rumors of this find reached

Hobart, the capital of Tasmania, and a naturalist named G. C. Cramp took an interest. In March 1962 he chartered a plane, located the beach, and found the decaying remains half buried in the sand. In the weeks that followed, various teams of scientists visited the spot and inspected the creature—if it was a creature.

The mass was eight feet long, three feet wide and ten inches thick. It contained no bones, spine, or other hard substance, but was made of tough, fibrous material. The scientists were puzzled and tossed around all the classic theories: it was whale blubber; it was the remains of a squid; it was an unidentifiable; it was the carcass of a prehistoric animal recently freed from an Arctic iceberg. The press in Tasmania and Australia headlined the story belatedly in 1962, and the government lowered a rather peculiar curtain of secrecy over the whole affair. All kinds of idiotic explanations were mouthed by Type B scientists and politicians. Ivan Sanderson collected all the clippings and corresponded with some of the men involved. The first ten pages of his book Things (1967) are devoted to the case. The only possible conclusion is that no one was able to reach any rational conclusion. We do not know what the thing was, where it came from, or, strangely, where it finally went.

Each year brings more Globsters and carcasses to isolated beaches all over the world. On February 10, 1968, a fisherman named Vincenzo Croce was walking along a beach near Campobello, Sicily, when he noticed some bones sticking out of the sand. They proved to be the remains of a giant lizard which had measured between twenty-three and thirty feet long. Some pieces of flesh still clung to the bones and the spinal column was intact, indicating that the creature had been alive only a short time before. The head was flat and "duck-shaped." Thousands of tourists descended on Campobello to take a look at this thing before it was finally carted off to a museum. Assorted scientists

soberly informed the world that it was not a whale, tuna, dolphin, or shark. But no one could say what it was. It really could not have been a thirty-foot lizard, you see, because there was no such animal.

There is now.

In July 1968 the Associated Press revealed that Japanese fishermen had hauled up another Incomprehensible in the Pacific. It was six feet long, weighed two hundred pounds, had two side fins "sharp as hatchets," and there were nine "thorns" scattered on its head and back. Oh, yes, it was also covered with polka dots.

Finally, here is a widely printed news story from Tecolutla, Mexico, March 6, 1969:

> Villagers have found a thirty-five-ton sea creature which has washed up on the beach here. The carcass of the creature was described as about thirty feet long and eighteen feet wide, with a "serpent-like body," covered with hard armor, jointed so it would swim. It was also reported to have a ten-foot tusk. The creature washed up on February 28 and marine biologists are studying it in an effort to determine if it belonged to the age of dinosaurs. Mexican authorities on prehistoric sea life say that the sea monster could be fifty thousand years old. Dr. Bernardo Villa of the National University of Mexico said the creature may have been trapped and preserved in an Arctic iceberg and discovered when the iceberg finally melted. Superstitious fishermen recovered a fin, two tusks, and large portions of hide before scientists arrived but authorities have recovered most of the pieces cut from the animal and turned them over to scientists. The fishermen who sighted the animal insist the animal was alive when they first saw it and only died later. Scientists

say the body has not become too decomposed because it still is in salt water.

This story certainly has the ring of authenticity. The creature weighed thirty-five tons (how did they ever weigh it?), it was 50,000 years old but still alive when first seen, and it came out of a melted iceberg thousands of miles north of Mexico. Members of the Society for the Investigation of the Unexplained (SITU) zeroed in on this case and quickly smelled whale blubber. The creature was, in fact, a rotting sperm whale and the "tusks" were the lower jaw of the mammal. Apparently a wire service "stringer" had collected together some rumors and knit them into a story that was flashed around the world.

Despite hoaxes and misinterpretations of this sort, the evidence for the existence of all kinds of unknown sea creatures is impressive. There are scores of fascinating books devoted exclusively to sea serpent sightings covering the past several hundred years. Leading scientists and oceanographers have seen these things. We know that giant squid and eels of unbelievable size lurk in the ocean depths. We do not know what else is down there. Occasionally these monstrous sea creatures do wriggle to the surface, and from time to time they drift ashore and rot on beaches from Sicily to Tasmania, or visit deep water lakes all over the world.

TWENTY-ONE

The Great Sea Serpent of Silver Lake, New York

"Boys, that thing is moving!"

Those excited words launched one of the most celebrated sea serpent events of 1855, although it has now been long forgotten. At 9:00 P.M. on the evening of Friday, July 13, 1855, four men and two boys were in a boat fishing on Silver Lake in the northwestern part of New York State. It was shortly after dusk and the stars brightly illuminated the waters. Suddenly, off the stern of the boat, a long object appeared. At first it looked like a log eighty or one hundred feet long and the group did not pay too much attention to it until it disappeared abruptly and reappeared moments later in another position.

"Its head—it could no longer be called a log—was now within three rods of the boat," The Wyoming County Times reported on July 18, 1855, "and, as it approached, the waves parted on either side as if a boat were leisurely approaching."

The fishermen were somewhat dismayed and Alonzo Scribner

wasted no time in trying to cut the anchor rope. But he dropped his knife into the water and had to haul the anchor up by hand while his comrades put their backs to their oars. The thing bobbed beneath the waves again, and again reappeared behind their stern. "All in the boat had a fair view of the creature," the Times story continued, "and concur in representing it as a most horrid and repulsive looking monster . . . On the opposite side of the boat, about a rod and a half to the northeast, the other extremity of the serpent was in full view, lashing the water with its tail. When the forward part descended upon the water it created waves that nearly capsized the boat and suspended regular operations at the oars.

"The party reached shore in safety, but frightened most out of their senses."

The very next night another group of young men were out on the lake when they heard a noise "like a tow line being raised from the water." They looked around and saw "the form of a bow upon the water, its center projecting a trifle above the water line, but both ends concealed from view." This thing was ten to twelve feet long and at least a foot in diameter (the earlier witnesses had described it as being as big around as a flour barrel). The young men vowed on the spot never to venture out onto the lake again after dark.

Word that a mighty sea serpent had taken up residence in placid Silver Lake spread throughout the area and hordes of eager monster hunters descended upon it. Silver Lake is located about fifty miles south of Buffalo, New York, and is about four miles long and three-quarters of a mile wide. In 1855 the area was rustic and largely undeveloped. A few water mills operated along the shores and the lake was a popular fishing spot for local sportsmen. Mohawk and Seneca Indians had originally roamed the region but the white man began to push them out around 1800.

It was inevitable that followers of the "monster mania" should

turn to the Indians for an explanation. The Wyoming County Times reported on July 25, 1855, that "a reverend gentleman well known in this community" had interviewed a fifty-year old Indian named John John. The Indian soberly stated that tribes encamped on the shores of the lake had been frightened a number of times by a serpent or monster. As a result the Indians avoided the place and would not fish or bathe there. The monster was "as big as a flour barrel," John John said.

A Vigilance Society was quickly formed in the nearby town of Perry, New York, a mile or so from the lake, and armed men began to prowl the shores day and night, hoping to bag the biggest game of all. The serpent wisely laid low for a few days and then, unlike lightning, chose to strike in the same place twice, again frightening one of the original witnesses, Mr. Charles Hall and his family. They were out on the lake on Friday, July 27, when the thing popped up near their boat. According to the sworn affadavit later signed by the witnesses, they "all sat quietly in the boat and looked at it. It appeared to be of a dark color at first, but as it moved off going into the water, it was of a lighter color, of a copper color . . . Its head and forward part was above water at least a yard, and upon its back it appeared to have a fin as wide as father's hand . . . Its head was as much as fifteen or sixteen inches around and its back was much larger . . . it [the head] was as large as a calf's head . . ."

By the end of July Silver Lake was mobbed. "The well-authenticated statements of Hall, McKnight, John John, and others have attracted to this village many of the citizens of the adjoining towns and villages, and quite a number of visitors from cities have taken quarters with their friends or are located at Walker's well-kept hotel," the Times remarked on August 1, 1855. Whalers came with harpoons. The mania mounted. The Times even promised to publish a daily edition to keep up with the flow of reports. Business boomed in Perry.

The sea serpent displayed intelligence by turning up during times when the weather was bad and no boats were out, or appearing briefly in isolated spots before very small groups of startled witnesses.

On Wednesday, August 1, 1855, the monster was seen at high noon by at least half a dozen different persons from different points of view. There were no boats out. The parties who saw it did not know each other. The Times regarded the sightings as conclusive proof and stated that "the existence of a monster fish or serpent species in the quiet waters of Silver Lake was established beyond reasonable doubt, if indeed there has been room for doubt in the past week."

Newspapers throughout Western New York were now hawking this wonder. The published accounts carefully noted that a monster had been "repeatedly seen during the past thirty years in Silver Lake." Newspapermen flocked to Perry to join the harpoon-carrying whalers and the teams of earnest men who were busily constructing decoys in the shape of ducks and chickens to lure the creature into captivity.

A few years previous Perry, New York, had been named Mudville. It was renamed to honor Commodore Perry, "the hero of Lake Erie." The streets of the little town were crawling with tourists, journalists, and monster hunters that August. The only hotel in town, Walker House, was packed to capacity. In the 1840s Mr. A. B. Walker had managed a stagecoach route between Perry and Batavia, New York. But the development of railroads wrecked the stagecoach business. For a time Walker managed the National Hotel in Perry, then he purchased the property for Walker House and established what was apparently a fine hostelery. A surviving photo of Mr. Walker shows a white-bearded man with twinkling eyes. The history of the period suggests that Mr. Walker had suffered various business setbacks in his younger days, but the

monster mania of 1855 promised to make his fortune.[1]

On Wednesday, August 15, 1855, Edwin Fanning was strolling along Chapin's Landing at Silver Lake when the sea serpent surfaced again. Fanning signed the usual sworn affadavit, giving this studied description: ". . . in the range of the mouth of the inlet and about fifteen rods from where I was standing, a monster of a serpent rose out of the water, exhibiting at least eight feet of the forward portion of its body above the water. In a few seconds he disappeared; in about three minutes afterward he again came to the surface, about the same length being exposed as before. He remained on the surface of the water at least three minutes, making revolutions similar to those of a snake. His body was as large as a large barrel; his head about a foot in diameter at the largest point. He spouted water from his mouth at least four feet high and it would fall back upon him like the play of water from a fountain. His length I should think was at least one hundred feet."

A tower was erected at the north end of the lake and sentries were posted around the clock to watch for the enigmatic reptile. One man, Mr. Joshua Jenks, was out on the lake, armed to the teeth, when the monster surfaced about fifteen feet from his boat. He was so taken aback that the frantic shot he fired missed completely. In September a group of local businessmen organized a company to catch the creature and raised one thousand dollars capital (a lot of money in 1855). They called themselves The Experiment Company. It seems that the monster was somehow aware of all these preparations and his appearances became fewer. While the searchers were clustered at one end of the lake, the serpent would suddenly bob up a mile away. When bad weather lashed the lake and rendered small boats useless, the playful monster would rise up in the center as if to mock the teeming throngs on the shores. The perimeter of the lake must have looked

like an army fortification, bristling with campers armed with bows and arrows, shotguns, rifles, and harpoons. One story even implies that a cannon was either implaced, or was going to be implaced, near one of the inlets where the creature had been seen most frequently.

Sightings tapered off in 1856 but the crowds still came.

Then, in 1857, the Walker House was destroyed by fire. The volunteer firemen fighting the blaze were dumbstruck to find a huge, suspicious object in the attic of the hotel. It proved to be a giant rubber sea serpent. Those were rough-and-ready days, you must remember, and shootings, lynchings, and tar-and-feathering were common practices. Mr. Walker did not even linger long enough to collect his fire insurance. He departed immediately for Canada.

Frank Roberts of the Perry Record (now defunct) pieced the story together this way:

> Business had been very quiet in the hotel line in Perry for several reasons. Various schemes for improving conditions had been considered, and to the late A. B. Walker is credited the plan of creating the Silver Lake Sea Serpent. Confiding the proposition to a few of his intimate and trustworthy friends, he found that it met with instant approval. Of various plans discussed, the following was deemed the most practical and surest of ultimate success. The serpent was to be constructed of a body about sixty feet long, covered with a waterproof canvas supported on the inside by coiled wire. A trench was to be dug and gas pipe laid from the basement of a shanty situated on the west side of the lake, to the lake shore. A large pair of bellows such as were used in a

blacksmith shop, secreted in the basement of the shanty connected to that end of the pipe, and a small light rubber hose from the lake end to the serpent. The body was to be painted a deep green color, with bright yellow spots added to give it a more hideous appearance. Eyes and mouth were to be colored a bright red. The plan of manipulating the serpent was simple. It was to be taken out and sunk in the lake, and then when everything was ready, the bellows were to be operated and air forced into the serpent, which naturally would cause it to rise to the surface. Weights were to be attached to the different portions of the body to insure its sinking as the air was allowed to escape. Three ropes were to be attached to the forward portion of the body, one extending to the shore where the ice house now stands; one across the lake, and the other to the marsh at the north end; the serpent to be propelled in any direction by the aid of these ropes.

Many nights were spent by these friends in its construction. It is said that the serpent was made in the old Chapin tannery, which it will be remembered, was situated in the outlet ravine. At last it was completed and taken at night to the lake and sunk in about twenty feet of water. One of the men went across to the shanty to operate the bellows, the others remaining near the spot where the serpent was sunk, to note the results of their labors. They did not have long to wait, for suddenly the head of the serpent appeared and rose gracefully to a height of about eight feet above the water. Other portions of the monster became visible and the entire construction was so lifelike that it sent the shivers coursing through the bodies of the builders. It was towed about by the men for a time to be certain that it would remain upright and

work well generally. Then the signal was given, the bellows stopped forcing the air, and the monster which was to place Perry and Silver Lake 'on the map' forever sank rapidly and soon disappeared from view. Its tryout proved a great success, even more so than the builders had anticipated.

The thing to do now was for them to wait for a favorable time to 'spring it' upon the people. On Friday evening, July 13, 1855, one of the men reported a boatload of men engaged in fishing not far from where the serpent was secreted. Other conditions being favorable, it was decided that the proper time to open the show had arrived. It was destined to be a larger and more nerve-racking entertainment than any of them had dreamed.

After a period of several weeks of genuine excitement, pleasure, and a greatly increased business at the hotel, it began to dawn upon the men that things would be mighty hot for them in this section of the country if their mischief were found out. On two or three occasions only a miracle seemed to have prevented discovery, and finally, after one of these narrow escapes, it was decided that the sea serpent had done its full duty, had accomplished the purpose for which it was constructed, and now must disappear forever. Accordingly, it was taken from the lake and stored in the attic of the hotel.

Eleven years later, Mr. Walker returned to Perry. People had decided that he was really a hero instead of a villain, after all, and he ran another hotel there until his death in 1889. Periodically the Perry Chamber of Commerce stages a Sea Serpent Festival in honor of one of the greatest hoaxes of the nineteenth century. If

you write to the Chamber of Commerce in Perry, New York, they will send you a pamphlet summarizing the story.

The Silver Lake affair points up several interesting things. First of all, the witnesses generally gave a very accurate description of what they had seen. Their stories tallied. The newspapers of 1855 did a responsible job of reporting what the witnesses had described, and the general situation. Later events proved that the spectators had, indeed, seen exactly what they thought they saw. Only Fanning claimed that it spouted water from its mouth . . . and this may have been an effect caused by leaking air. All of the witnesses seemed to have missed the yellow spots on the serpent. Or, perhaps, the newspaper editors felt that "yellow polka-dots" were a bit much and deliberately deleted that detail from the published accounts.

On the other hand, our old reliable Indian John John must have been filled with hot air. Or maybe he was indulging in the well-known Indian pastime of "putting on" his white brother.

The case also proves that a sea serpent hoax is possible and was possible even in the year 1855. It's too bad there were no psychologists and sociologists in 1855 who could have visited Silver Lake and made a thorough study of the "monster mania" that developed there.

TWENTY-TWO

The Yellow Submarine Caper

EARLY IN 1969 the good citizens residing around Lake Catemaco in Mexico began to see their pet monster again. Fishermen described it as being a huge black serpent with two horns jutting out from its ugly forehead. It waddled ashore late at night but leapt back into the lake when discovered. Local Indians insist that "a giant crocodile" has always lived in the lake.

Lake monsters comprise our final category of Unbelievables. Placid little bodies of water all over the world proudly lay claim to the dubious distinction of serving as the habitat for one or more sea serpents. A few of them sound disturbingly like the Silver Lake hoax; that is, the creatures cleverly surface very briefly just before the annual tourist season begins. But in most cases, published sightings can be traced back fifty or even one hundred years. And, as usual, the descriptions remain remarkably consistent. Sometimes several years will pass without a new sighting. During these lulls newspapermen and monster hunters turn to the Indians for the real facts.

Lake Walker in Nevada has a resident monster. High school

athletic teams in the nearby town of Hawthorne call themselves "The Serpents." On February 3, 1965, the Mineral County, Nevada, Independent-News revealed that early Indian settlers around the lake became annoyed because the monster occasionally dined on members of the tribe. They decided to launch a major effort to trap and kill the creature. But, somehow, the swimming sneak overheard the plot, surfaced, and held a powwow with his pursuers. A bargain was struck. If the Indians promised not to kill him and turn his hide into moccasins, he would promise to eat only white men. For some odd reason, Indians are prejudiced against white men so they accepted this deal with glee.

In the fall 1969 issue of Old West, a nonfiction magazine, a letter from a couple who lived in Babbitt, Nevada, was reprinted. This couple claims to have seen the Lake Walker monster late in April 1956. They said it first looked "like a high powered motor boat" and that it actually outswam their automobile as they drove along the edge of the lake at thirty-five miles per hour.

"It started straight from us at a great speed for about a hundred yards," the couple reported, "and there it whipped to the left and submerged. We watched this happen three times, then it disappeared around the point into deeper water. We are sure, we watched it for all of ten or fifteen minutes. It must have been forty-five to fifty feet long and its back stuck up above the water at least four or five feet when it was swimming fast. We think in our own minds that it was feeding on the mud hens which were plentiful on the lake at that time . . ."

When we embarked upon our scholarly safari into the never-never land of monsters we planned to collect and catalog all the known lake monsters in the United States. It quickly became clear, however, that many of these cases were really Sasquatch-type sightings. Others were paraphysical one-time-only appearances of Abominable Swamp Slobs and their enigmatic luminous brethren.

Those that are left seem to be genuine sea creatures of some kind, inhabiting a few random deep water lakes.

The most authentic of the American lake monsters may be living at the bottom of Flathead Lake, near Polson, Montana. Whatever it is, it has been seen by a great many people over a long stretch of time. Mr. Paul Fugleberg, editor of the Flathead Courier, has a standing offer of twenty-five dollars for the first photo of the creature. "Nobody who sees it ever seems to have a camera," he says.

The Flathead mystery has been solved several times by Type B scientists. One says it is a homemade submarine. Others have defined it as "an overweight skin diver." A local real estate broker has offered to pay one hundred dollars a foot to the fisherman that catches the thing. This could cost him a pretty penny if it is as big as some of the witnesses believe it to be.

Back in the 1920s, fishermen on Flathead Lake complained that some giant unidentified swimming object was tearing their nets to shreds; even nets designed to withstand forty-pound bull trout. In September 1960 Mrs. Gilbert Zigler heard waves crashing against the shore and saw water splashing high over the end of a pier. Moving up for a closer look, Mrs. Zigler and her husband were amazed to see a huge black something rubbing up against the pier, like an animal scratching its back.

"It was a horrible looking thing," Mrs. Zigler recalled, "with a head about the size of a horse . . . and about a foot of neck showing."

Mr. Zigler ran back to his house for his rifle but by the time he returned the creature was swimming nonchalantly out of range.

There was a rash of sightings in 1963. A dozen persons reportedly saw the Flathead monster on the single afternoon of June 15 that year. Two high school teachers, Miss Heather McLeod and Mrs. Genevieve Parratt, said they saw it at 11:30 A.M. on

September 8, 1963. It was "a dark gray object with three humps" about ten feet long. It undulated, submerged and surfaced again, and left a boat-like wake. Most of the close-up sightings describe it as moving very fast, too fast for a giant sturgeon (one of the more popular explanations), and it creates waves two and three feet high.

"If you're like most folks," Paul Fugelburg wrote a few years ago, "you'll listen to reports of superfish sightings with tongue in cheek and one eye winking at your partner.

"But after the third or fourth go 'round, you'll suddenly realize that these folks aren't just flapping their gums, trying to amuse a tourist with tall tales. By golly, they've seen something that really does defy description and explanation in the shimmering blue Flathead Lake."

Lake Waterton, also in Montana, has produced a stream of monster reports over the years, too. At least two of the witnesses (A.G. Baalim and Captain Ron Boyce) have described the Waterton critter as being thirty-five or forty feet and having two horns on its head!

Then there is Payette Lake in Idaho, the Paint River in Michigan, and Lake Champlain on the border between New York and Vermont, all of which have been the focal points for reports of elongated, ugly-headed, undulating swimming things. Lake Champlain, of course, runs up to the Canadian border and is linked to the St. Lawrence River. There have been sea serpent sightings in the St. Lawrence, too. Plattsburgh, New York, is right on the edge of Lake Champlain and has been a very busy UFO "window" for the past twenty years. A little further south, in the Adirondack Mountains in New York State, bilious bogeymen have appeared periodically in the Black River, about two hundred miles north of New York City.

Back in 1951 a man named Wash Mellick was fishing in the

Black River when a fifteen-foot monster rose up out of the water near his boat. "It was dark brown in color," he reported, "and had a round, tapered body. It had fins like two hands, and its eyes stuck out like silver dollars. I threw stones at it, but it only stared at me."

Newspaper stories recounted other sightings and noted, "The monster has been reported seen in this isolated section of northern New York three times in the past ten years, but always when there was an electrical storm in progress."

" . . . always when there was an electrical storm in progress." We call your attention to Chapter Three and the various monster events which seemed to occur during electrical storms. It has been suggested that some of our paraphysical monsters can materialize only during electrical storms; that they somehow draw upon the energy in the air during such storms. In occult lore there is considerable literature on "water elementals," bizarre life forms which manifest themselves temporarily in and around water. The stories of "water elementals" are endless, and the theories to explain them are weird and complex. But we can not exclude the possibility that some of our Swamp Slobs and lake creatures might be temporary psychic projections; mindless manifestations of energy. Such projections could take almost any form when viewed by limited human perception. They could appear as "little men," as in flying saucer lore, or gruesome beasts as in the 1965 episodes around Sister Lakes in Michigan. The "reflective" factor, discussed in Chapter Fifteen, could even play a part and the entity might construct itself from images in the witnesses' minds. Thus, when the proper witness (percipient) is in the right place ("window") at the right time ("flap" period) almost anything could take place. If this is the case, then the percipient actually sees what he later describes. It was very real to him. But it did not really exist at all and all the bloodhounds, helicopters and sheriff's posses in the

world would not be able to find the creature.

However, we still have plenty of apparently real monsters to worry about. There are other lakes and other sea serpents.

Not to be outdone by the capitalistic propaganda generated around American lakes, the Soviet Union claims to have several lake monsters of its own. Naturally, theirs are bigger, better, and more fierce than ours. One lives in Lake Vorota in Siberia. He is at least twenty-five feet long, has a broad, flat head, and makes a loud roaring sound. A team of divers equipped with sonar instruments explored the bottom of Lake Vorota in May 1966, but all they found was mud. Three other Siberian lakes in the isolated Oimyakon Plateau are said to be inhabited by our silly submersibles.

Other teams of scientists laden down with fancy gadgets have plumbed the depths of Okanagan Lake in British Columbia, Canada, searching for the legendary monster known as Ogopogo. The Ogopogo has been surprising and alarming Indians and hunters for nearly a century. Apparently it is a cross between a dragon, a serpent, an alligator and an Abominable Swamp Slob. And that is some combination!

Ogopogo seems to have a lot of company up in Canada. Several other bodies of water, such as Lakes Sushwap, Cowichan, and Pohengamook, have generated a torrent of monster reports. Dr. Vadim Vladikov, Director of the Quebec Department of Games and Fisheries, described the thing in Lake Pohengamok, Quebec, as "an animal between twelve and eighteen feet long, brown or black in color, with a round back two or three feet wide, and a sawtooth fin down the center. Any time anyone approaches close, the animal slithers away and sinks below the surface."

Quebec is in the eastern part of Canada. Over in the western part, in British Columbia, home of the Sasquatch, folks have been seeing unidentified swimming objects for years. On December 28,

1962, Mrs. Robert Guy and Mrs. K. B. Holland reported seeing "a large hump that which came out of the water followed by the creature's head or neck" near New Westminster, British Columbia. It was the size of a horse, they said, and dark brown in color. It appeared to swim with an undulating motion, giving the impression of a long body following behind the head. They watched it with binoculars from a distance of about two-hundred yards and noted that it seemed to have "exaggerated" or protuberant lips.

Another creature, or perhaps the same one, has been seen around Shelter Point, British Columbia. In 1963, witness Mrs. J. C. Durrant described it as looking "like a dragon." The locals have an affectionate name for it. They call it the Klamahsosaurus.

The residents around Gabriola Island in the same area call their monster Cadborosaurus. Mrs. R. A. Stewart is among the many who have seen it. She had her experience in 1963 while fishing with her husband from a boat near the island. "I honestly saw the strangest sight," she recalled. "A large brown-headed animal swimming a few feet away from our small boat. It had a huge head, but it was its horrible wide-open jaws which terrified me. But by the time I screamed to my husband to row quickly to the beach, the creature had vanished."

Lake Iliamna in Alaska harbors a sea serpent of some sort, and there are lakes in Sweden which are also supposed to be infested with silly submersibles. Ireland has half-a-dozen deepwater lakes which have produced sightings for centuries. In June 1968 the Dublin Evening Herald reported that teenager Gay Dever was bicycling along the edge of Glendarry Lake on Achill Island in County Mayo when he saw a freakish creature stride out of the water and disappear into a woods.

"It was about twelve feet long, much bigger than a horse, and dark in color," Dever said. "It was moving in a jumpy way like a

kangaroo. It had a long head like a sheep and a long neck and tail. The hind legs were bigger than the front ones."

A thirty-year resident of the island, John Cooney, also claimed a sighting of a strange amphibian that June. "My friend Michael McNulty gave me a lift and as we came round a bend we saw it just in the middle of the road," Cooney testified. "It was between eight and twelve feet long, with a long neck like a swan—not much bigger. The tail was very thick. It was moving at an angle to us and we couldn't see exactly how long it was. And it was weaving and curving.

"It was a dark brown color and was shiny and scaly. The eyes were glittering. It disappeared in an instant into the thick undergrowth. We didn't stop to make any further inquiries."

When you weigh all of the descriptions compiled over the past two centuries, plus all the legends going back into the Middle Ages, author Wilkins' sighting of a prehistoric animal in a quiet stream in Cornwall, England, in 1949 (outlined in Chapter Five) does not seem so preposterous, after all. Wilkins said that the thing he saw resembled a plesiosaurus, and maybe he was right. Many of these other eyewitness descriptions also sound like a plesiosaurus. Of course, we all know that the dinosaur-like plesiosaurus has been extinct for millions of years. Our Type B scientists tell us that the big, long-necked creature which has frequently been sighted ambling overland from one lake in Scotland to another could not possibly be a plesiosaurus. Obviously it was just something that had escaped from a zoo.

Scotland does not have many zoos, but it does have several deepwater lakes teeming with unclassified animals. The most famous is a band of murky water twenty-eight miles long called Loch Ness. It is the home of "Nessie," the most celebrated and most hunted unidentified swimming object of them all.

Hundreds of popular books, magazine articles, and newspaper

features have been published about Loch Ness in recent years. In 1969, alone, we collected over forty news articles and wire service stories. For the past six years a well-financed scientific effort has been taking place at Loch Ness. Sonar and other modern gadgets have been plumbing the depths and anxious cameramen have been posted around the lake, eagerly awaiting Nessie's next appearance.

Most of the Loch Ness literature erroneously claims that the monster's first appearance was in the year 1934. During a visit to Atlanta, Georgia, we stopped by the offices of the Atlanta Constitution and, as is our practice, we spent a couple of hours scanning microfilms of old issues. We were amazed to find a full-page article on Loch Ness published in November 1896, complete with a woodcut which resembled exactly the modern drawings of Nessie. The creature had been seen frequently throughout the nineteenth century and then had lain low for a few decades. In the early 1930s Ruppert Gould took an interest in Loch Ness, and he tracked down and interviewed over sixty independent eyewitnesses from the 1920s and early 1930s, for his book The Loch Ness Monster and Others (1934). That book probably revived general interest in the Loch Ness mystery—an interest which has continued unabated for nearly four decades.

Historical references dating back to the sixteenth century have now been uncovered. In a feature article in the New York Daily News, July 9, 1967, George Nobbe offered this quote without citing his source: " 'He did overthrow huge oaks with his tail and therewith killed outright three men.' "

Nessie has obligingly posed for photographs several times, but most of these have been a bit disappointing, showing only blob or hump sticking out of the water. One picture, however, does reveal the classic long neck and flat head jutting high above the surface.

In 1954 the fishing trawler Rival picked up an unusual sonar signal while crossing the lake. Something huge was swimming

along at a depth of 540 feet. It was too big and too fast for an ordinary fish. The sonar was in perfect working order and the signal that bounced back was apparently accurate and legitimate. There have been other sonar returns since. In 1960 a group of signals indicated that as many as five monsters were moving about under the lake. That was also the year in which Tim Dinsdale photographed a blob churning up Loch Ness. His pictures were analyzed by experts from the Royal Air Force and they concluded that he had snapped "an animate object" not less than six feet wide, five feet high, and possibly as long as ninety-two feet! The RAF report was released in 1966 and set off a scientific stampede to Scotland's legendary lake. There was definitely something down there and Dr. Roy P. Mackal of the University of Chicago was one of those who was determined to find out exactly what it was. He visited Loch Ness, talked with witnesses, and studied the various photographs. Then he scratched his head and suggested that perhaps it was mollusk known as the giant sea slug, a distant relative of our friend the squid. Later, Dr. Mackal reconsidered and speculated that maybe it was a form of manatee, also called a sea cow. The sea cow is a bulbous beast that looks something like a seal.

In the mid-1960s the Loch Ness Phenomena Investigation Bureau Limited (LNPIB) was formed. The publishers of the World Book Encyclopedia coughed up twenty thousand dollars and a new, carefully planned investigation was launched.

An oceanographer named Dan Taylor arrived at the Loch in the summer of 1969, bringing along a twenty-foot fiberglass submarine painted bright yellow. Earlier divers had found the waters of the lake so murky that they could not even see a foot in front of their face. But Taylor planned to chase the creature(s) by sonar and other sophisticated instruments. There was even talk of firing tranquilizer darts at the poor creature. These plans raised

cries of protest from all sides. It seems that the Scots had developed a special fondness for Nessie.

"I'm all for observing the monster, but I'm against molesting it," Lord Lovat, the head of a Scottish clan declared. "I think it's just damnable to bully the creature.

"I should hate to think of Nessie being captured and perhaps taken to some zoo or to America like the liner Queen Mary. It should be made a punishable offense to do that."

As it turned out, Nessie had nothing to fear from the yellow submarine. As soon as the Viper Fish, which is what it is called, was launched onto the lake it displayed a puzzling reluctance to submerge. A rather embarrassing trait for a submarine to have. Then when it was towed to a pier it suddenly sprang a leak and sank altogether.

While Mr. Taylor was desperately trying to make his submarine lake-worthy, others were out viewing the monster. In July 1969 two men working for a movie company on the lake were in another midget submarine when their sonar picked up something forty feet long traveling at a depth of about five hundred feet. It moved too fast for them to pursue it.

A couple of months earlier two British businessmen found a huge bone on the edge of the lake. It was four feet two inches long and porous. At first they thought it was a log but when they realized they may have discovered the remains of a monster they turned it over to the LNPIB.

The summer ended with the weary monster chasers gathering around the bar in Glenurquhart Lodge in Drumnadrochit, Scotland. The guest list at the lodge read like Who's Who. It included newspapermen, novelists, actors, and scientists from all over the world. Clem Lister-Skelton, an ex-Shakespearian actor, was often the center of attention since he claims to have seen Nessie no less than nine times. He keeps coming back for another

look. Dr. Mackal was there, no longer so certain about his theories of giant sea slugs and sea cows.

And somewhere out there in the night a sound rings across the glassy surface of the lake. It is not the sound of a woman screaming or a baby crying. Listen very closely. It sounds like laughter.

TWENTY-THREE

SOMETHING ELSE . . .

A MERE 200 years ago, when science first began the task of classifying animals systematically, only 808 reptiles, mammals, birds and amphibians were known. By 1900 a total of 21,000 had been classified. Since then, an average of 15 previously unknown reptiles, 220 mammals, and 400 birds have been discovered, studies, and entered into the scientific records each year. Today science has formally recognized the existence of approximately 70,000 creatures. Many of those creatures were nothing more than myths and legends in 1700. Men have dedicated their entire lives to collecting and cataloging beetles or mosquitos. Others are now founding a rather shaky science called "exo-biology"; the study of life on other planets. Before too many more years pass we will be sifting the red loam of Mars for microbes, and we may be chasing lizards on Venus and harpooning Globsters in the red spot of Jupiter. But from what we are now learning about the planets in our own tiny solar system, a mere dot on the edge of the Milky Way, it looks as if the Earth alone is hospitable to life. By the laws

of probability there should be other planets in other galaxies, perhaps billions of them, and life may exist somewhere out there far beyond the range of our telescopes and rockets. We can only guess. We cannot even be sure that planets may not be a phenomenon instead of a fact of celestial mechanics. Planets could be entirely unique to our own little section of space; a freakish development of condensed energy.

But this much we do know: Earth is the most splendid of all places within our reach. The beautiful blue orb covered with white clouds is more than just "home" to our wandering astronauts. It is also home for thousands upon thousands of creatures who have learned to thrive in the skies, the oceans, the jungles, the deserts, and deep within the earth itself. Twenty years from now some of the creatures we have commented upon with some mystification may be neatly catalogued, labeled with Latin names, and they may be pacing the cages of our zoos or standing stuffed in our museums. Canada may establish a Bureau for Sasquatch Affairs similar to our Bureau of Indian Affairs. Boats and fishermen may be forbidden to venture onto Loch Ness so that Nessie may frolic about in peace. Anything is possible on this impossible world of ours.

We have tried to separate the Unbelievables into two main categories. Group 1 are genuine animals of land and sea but still unknown to science. They include at least three (probably more) types of Abominable Snow Persons, and at least seven large amphibian mammals and reptiles. Overall, they seem to be a harmless lot. They avoid us and prefer that we leave them alone. A small group of dedicated monster hunters are slowly accumulating evidence—footprints, bones, photographs—that Group 1 exists and deserves recognition.

Group 2 is another story altogether. They are the phantoms that come crashing out of the bushes late at night. They seem to be part

of something else. Something sinister and even hostile to us. This nucleate phenomenon has always existed on this planet and has taken many forms. Some of the Unbelievables we have described may have been transmogrifications or disguises for the central phenomenon. They materialize when lightning courses across the sky or certain magnetic conditions prevail in "window" areas. They are not real or physical in the usual sense of those terms. But they are real enough while they last. They are paraphysical and can assume the forms of one-eyed giants stepping out of magnificent flying machines, or long-fingered Orientals driving around in black Cadillacs which can melt into the air. Their shennanigans over the past several thousand years have spawned many of our religious and occult beliefs. In trying to record their activities, we have built up a literature based upon nonsensical manipulations and induced hallucinations. Cults and small groups of independent researchers have sprung up, each dedicated to one minor group of manifestations, each unable to view or grasp the whole. The demonologists have been studying the same thing as the UFOlogists. Demonomania (possession of a human mind or body by an outside force) produces classic patterns and symptoms well-known to psychiatry. These patterns appear in many cases of UFO contact but have gone unrecognized. In psychical research the same patterns are repeated. When a psychic or medium experiences these symptoms they say they are "overshadowed." All of these diversified groups are victims of the same phenomena, but they all see it from a different frame of reference and accept different explanations for it.

In the fourteenth and fifteenth centuries "vampires" ran amok in central Europe while "fairies" and "little people" literally engulfed all the territory between Germany and Ireland. Animals vanished or were found drained of blood. People vanished, too.

People are still vanishing. Over 100,000 people disappear every

year in the U.S.A. alone. Of course, a majority of these are merely fleeing creditors, the law, and unwanted spouses. Some meet with foul play and end up in the bottom of the river. But about 15,000 vanish under the most incredible circumstances. A family man steps into his backyard to mow the lawn. He is never seen again. A waitress steps out of a restaurant to put a dime in a parking meter and disappears forever. A family of five in a suburb melt into nothingness, leaving behind all their clothes, bank accounts, the family car. We have dozens of puzzling cases in our files.

And the animals! Something has always been slaughtering our dogs, cats, horses, and cows. We have cited many examples in this book. The slaughter is senseless . . . and very mysterious.

These things are happening in every country on earth. Today we are beginning to blame such events on flying saucers, particularly in South America. A few years ago we blamed Abominable Swamp Slobs, fairies, and vampires. There really is a Hamlin in Germany and there really was a Pied Piper who lured away a large group of Hamlin children in the Middle Ages. Back in 1212, fifty thousand children marched off on the Children's Crusade and vanished.

Whole villages have disappeared. There are many well-documented examples. There is archaeological evidence that entire ancient cities were suddenly deprived of their populations on a single mysterious day.

The flying saucers are merely another frame of reference to provide us with an acceptable explanation for some of these grotesque events. An invisible phenomenon is always stalking us and manipulating our beliefs. We see only what it chooses to let us see, and we usually react in exactly the way it might expect us to react. Every culture on earth has legends and stories about the same thing, even the completely isolated tribes of the Pacific islands and the remote inland villages of South America.

The irascible Charles Fort was aware of all this when he compiled his book Lo! back in the 1920s. He stated:

> There may be occult things, beings and events, and there may be something of the nature of an occult police force, which operates to divert human suspicions, and to supply explanations that are good enough for whatever [minds] human beings have—or that, if there be occult mischiefmakers and occult ravagers, they may be of a world also of other beings that are acting to check them, and to explain them, not benevolently, but to divert suspicion from themselves, because they, too, may be exploiting life upon this earth, but in ways more subtle, and in orderly or organized fashion.

One group of flying saucer cultists does believe that some great intergalactic police force is watching over us. But, of course, all religions teach the same thing in somewhat different terms. Even in the Bible we are told that UFOs are earthbound and designed to spy upon us. This is spelled out rather plainly in Zechariah (5:1-5) and in many other sections.

In this book we have tried to present a sampling of the more physical events which fell into specific categories. If you review the thousands of available books on psychic phenomena you will find many startling and precise parallels. We are not coping with ghosts or extraterrestrial visitants. Rather, we are facing, and have always faced, denizens of some unseen world which surrounds us. Ancient man was very conscious of that world. In the original text of the Bible the word "sheol" was used frequently, and it meant "invisible world." Somehow this was translated into "hell" and given an entirely new meaning.

In May 1969 Sir Victor Goddard, an air marshal in the Royal Air

Force delivered a speech to British UFOlogists. In that speech he stated; "The astral world of illusion which (on psychical evidence) is greatly inhabited by illusion-prone spirits, is well-known for its multifarious imaginative activities and exhortations. Seemingly some of its denizens are eager to exemplify 'principalities and powers.' Others pronounce upon morality, spirituality, deity, etc. All of these astral exponents who invoke human consciousness may be sincere but many of their theses may be framed to propagate some special phantasm . . . or to indulge an inveterate and continuing technological urge towards materialistic progress or simply to astonish and disturb the gullible 'for the devil of it.'"

In recent years thousands of people have been confronted by strange entities who did, indeed, "exemplify principalities and powers." They talked of great super-civilizations in the sky and carefully nurtured the cultish beliefs, but actually they were merely promoting "some special phantasm" designed, perhaps, to divert us from suspecting that they were exploiting us in some fashion, as Fort suggested.

The phenomenon has created cults, and the cults have created foolish causes. A great deal of harm has been done by amateur investigators and their organizations. They have blundered about the landscape, branding innocent people liars and fools. They have gone on radio and television to spread the subversive antigovernment propaganda so cunningly implanted by the "astral world of illusion." These ill-equipped, bewildered, over-emotional pseudoinvestigators have been the real victims in this game.

We know from our own experiences and investigations that thousands of people have seen exactly what they have reported. We do not question their reliability or their sanity. But we do feel that research into these matters must be all-inclusive and much more systematic than it has been. We hope that more people will come forth with their stories in the future so that we may have an

even larger volume of data to work with. Most important of all we must begin the job of isolating and examining the subjective psychological factors which sometimes produce confabulation and complicated hallucinatory effects. The central phenomenon seems to have the ability to control the human mind and instead of ridiculing and condemning the people who suffer from this, we should be studying them carefully. Through such people we may eventually be able to untangle the many hidden aspects and problems. Again, we must stress that we do not believe these witnesses are insane or that they require medical and psychiatric treatment. We are interested in the paranormal experience as induced by abnormal conditions and influences.

We have cited scores of incidents in which "monster mania" has gripped whole counties, and even whole states. In recent years, the flying saucer waves have created "UFO mania" with thousands of people pouring into "flap" or "window" areas night after night in the hopes of glimpsing the mysterious objects. Both "monster mania" and "UFO mania" are the same thing and have never been studied by sociologists and psychologists. Only one study of this type has been conducted. In 1939 a group from Princeton carried out a study of the panic produced by Orson Welles' famous "Invasion from Mars" radio broadcast. Similar studies should be conducted in-depth in places like West Virginia. Our guess is that psychologists will find that curiosity far exceeds actual fear and panic in the "flap" areas.

To recognize the full nature of the phenomenon you must carefully study all of the parts. Witchcraft, Voodoo, Spiritualism, and Black Magic are as important as "little green men" and bilious giants with glowing green eyes. Once you begin to understand how the many parts dovetail together you will discover that the "invisible world" has exercised a peculiar influence over the affairs of man. This will lead you into a study of human history and,

eventually, into philosophy. Over two hundred years ago students of phenomenology began to recognize these links, and abstract philosophical concepts have slowly developed. Hundreds of leading scientists and physicists, from Thomas Edison to Albert Einstein, grasped these broader problems. Thousands of long, carefully thought out books have been published fully defining what we can only hint at here.

No one can claim to know all the answers. But we are finally learning to ask the right questions.

There are things on this planet, and around it, that are far beyond anything you can imagine. The monsters stalking our highways and farm fields are only part of that "something else." It is time for us to bring all of the nonsense to an end. Time to smoke out the real culprits and tell them we do not much enjoy having our blood sucked and our brains boggled.

In the beginning of this book we said that someone within two hundred miles of your home, no matter where you live on this planet, had had a direct personal confrontation with an Unbelievable. We think we have proved that point, at least. Perhaps you are still skeptical. Perhaps you think that some perfectly mundane answer will be found for all these events at some time in the future. We are not trying to turn you into a believer or disbeliever. We have only tried to lay out the facts before you.

Belief—or disbelief—will come to you from another direction. Next week, next month, or next year you may be driving along a deserted country road late at night and as you round a bend you will suddenly see. . . .

[1] Deutsche Sagen, Vol. 1, p. 229.

[2] See Chap. 13.

[1] See Memoirs of the Historical Society of Pennsylvania, Vol. 12.

[2] See the Ohio Historical and Archaelogical Society, Vol. 2.

[1] Jadoo by John A. Keel, published by Julian Messner, Inc., 1957. Out of print.

[1] See Roger Patterson, Do Abominable Snowmen of America Really Exist? for full text of letter and further information.

[2] See Here for addresses.

[1] Humboldt, California Times, July 20, 1963.

[2] Courtesy APRO.

[3] Saga magazine, July 1969.

[4] Saga magazine, July 1969.

[5] Saga magazine, July 1969.

[6] From the files of the Morristown, New Jersey police department.

[7] Cleveland, Ohio Plain Dealer, April 24, 1968.

[8] From a report in the Louisville Kentucky Courier-Journal, October 24, 1878.

[9] Saga magazine, July 1969.

[10] Fate magazine, July & August 1969.

[11] From a personal letter dated January 7, 1961.

[12] See Argosy magazine, April 1969 for further details and additional cases.

[13] See Brad Steiger and Joan Whritenour, New UFO Breakthrough, pp. 88-89, for a fuller description of Case 11.

[1] Compare Mrs. Helwig's description with Case 12 in Chapter Ten.

[1] Dr. Jacques Vallee, Passport to Magonia, Chapter Four.

[1] Northwest Arkansas Times, September 8, 1969.

[2] Dunstable Borough Gazette, September 27, 1968.

[1] T. Fluornoy, From India to the Planet Mars.

[1] William Thomas Walsh, Our Lady of Fatima, p. 22.

[1] Re-examine Case 24, Chapter Ten.

[1] Britain's Flying Saucer Review (FSR) has published several well-documented articles on these mysterious submarine objects. Here is a partial listing: “Crew of Argentine Ship See Submarine UFO” by Oscar A. Galindez, FRS Mar./Apr. 1968; “More About UFOs and the Sea” by Antonio Ribera, FSR, Nov./Dec. 1965; “UFOs and the Scottish Seas” by W. S. Robertson, FSR, May/June 1965; “UFOs and the Sea” by Antonio Ribera, FSR, Nov./Dec. 1964; “Argentina 1962” by Gordon Creighton, FSR, July/Aug.

1964.

[1] Frank D. Roberts, History of the Town of Perry, New York (1915).